

ひられて居る事實を認めなくてはならない。今、その一例を引くならば、

- (6) As it was, Castro nearly had his knife through my gizzard. Got my left arm badly.

—Galsworthy, *Maid in Waiting*, IV.

(實のところカストロがもうすんでのことで、俺の喉に刀を立てるところであつた。左腕をひどくやられた)

の如きがある。⁽¹⁾ 誠に斯の如きは、稍方言的色彩を帯びたものとは言ひ得るが、兎に角相當に廣く教養ある人々の日常語中に用ひらるるところで、これを無學文盲の人の用語なりと斷ずる Poutsma の説⁽²⁾ は誤りである。それから、§53 の例 (12)–(24) に出た様な副詞が、目的補語として用ひられることの普通であることは、最早私が更めて言ふまでもないが、尙、念の爲、若干の實例を、稍異なる副詞の例と共に、特に十九世紀後半以後の作品の中から引いて参考に資することとしよう。

- (7) I remind thee to fan *aflame*⁽³⁾ the gift of God which is in thee.—Dean Farrar, *The Life and Work of Saint Paul*, II.

(1) 實際此用法は badly に於いて特に普通であるらしく、私は大正十四年二月 Isle of Wight に於いて或教養高き紳士の口から、I am afraid he made himself badly (=ill) by overwork. といふ言葉を聞いた。N.E.D. はこれに關して、*dial. quasi-adj.* Unwell, indisposed, in ill health. 1783 Ainsworth *Lat. Dict.* (Morell), Badly, *Malè se habens*. 1821 Mrs. Wheeler *Westmrl. Dial.* 45, I wur terrable feard a meakin mesel badly agayn. といふ記録を興へて居るだけであるが、誠に不十分な説明と言はなければならない。因に、後例 Westmoreland 方言の文は、I was terribly afraid of making myself ill again. の意である。尙、次頁参照。

(2) Cf. *A Grammar of Late Modern English*, Pt. II, I A, p. 362. 彼は badly に註して an illiterate word for poorly. と言ひ、私が前註に引いた N.E.D. の引用に見える Westmoreland 方言の例を引いて居るだけである。因に、私の例 (6) は、Galsworthy が Captain Hubert Charwell, D.S.O. の日記中のものと想定して書いた文で、それは或は Oxfordshire 方言の影響を受けたものと見ても良いかも知れないが、斷じて田夫野人の語と見るべきではない。尙、記録されざる私の經驗談が此處に役に立つものとするならば、前註に言つた事も参照されたい。あれは國立呼吸器病療養所の醫師の口から出た言葉である。p. 350 の脚註 (1) 参照。尙、p. 353 の例 (4) の poorly を、pp. 344–5 の説明と照合はせて参照せられたい。Cp. also: Having seen her safely inside (the carriage), I perched myself behind.—Doyle, *A Study in Scarlet*, I. v. これを上例 (2) と比較。

(3) aflame の位置に就いては、p. 356 の脚註 (2) 参照。

(我は汝に對して、神が汝の裡に賜うた天賦をいやが上にも感んならしめよと注意する)

- (8) You saw me *asleep*.—Hardy, *The Woodlanders*, XVIII.

(あなたは私が眠て居るところを御覽になりました)

- (9) I never saw him *alive* again.

—Watts-Dunton, *Aylwin*, XI. i.

(私は二度と再び生きて居る彼を見なかつた)

- (10) I wanted the locks *away*.⁽¹⁾

—Morris, *News from Nowhere*, XXV.

(私は開門が撤去されることを欲した)

- (11) She could only move uneasily on her seat, and wish him miles *away*.—'Violet Jacob,' *The Sheep-Stealers*, XI.

(彼女は只その席で不安げに身動きをして、彼がずつと遠方に行つてしまつてくれればいいのと思ふ外は、何ともなし得なかつた)

- (12) He leaves the door *ajar*.⁽²⁾—Barrie, *Old Friends*.

(彼は戸を半開きのままにして置く)

- (13) But leave the engines *alone*.⁽³⁾ They are sacred.

—Tomlinson, *Gallions Reach*, XIII.

(だが機關はいぢくらないで置け。神聖だ)

- (14) I doubt he 'll leave you poorly *off*.⁽⁴⁾

—Eliot, *The Mill on the Floss*, I. ix.

(あの人のお蔭でお前は貧乏しやせんかと思ふ)

(1) <O.E. *on weg* (=on way).

(2) 尙二三の例を追加する。He found the door just ajar.—Wilde, *The Canterville Ghost*, IV; Softly she arose, set the door ajar.—Stevenson, *The Bottle Imp*; He opened a closet-door that he had seen ajar on his way down.—Hardy, *Two on a Tower*, XXII. これ等に對しては §53 の例 (24) 比較。

(3) <M.E. *al oon* (=all one). 即ち、此語は疊に註した aflame, asleep, ajar, away 等とは成立を異にする。

(4) §53 の例 (18), (19) と比較。

- (15) And before I had time to add a further protest, he pulled the door *to*,⁽¹⁾ and I heard him lock me in from the outside.—Stevenson, *Kidnapped*, III.

(そして、私が今一言抗議をする暇も無いうちに、彼は戸をびつたりと閉めた。そして外から錠をかけて私を監禁してしまつた音が聞えた)

- (16) But it was an interruption. He wanted it *over*.
—Katherine Mansfield, *Psychology*.

(然しそれは邪魔であつた。彼はそれがすんで欲しかつた)

- (17) I have a day *off*.—Shaw, *Saint Joan*, *Epilogue*.

(私は一日のお暇をいただきたいのです)

- (18) I thought it as *well*⁽²⁾ to direct him down the communication trench.—Blunden, *Undertones of War*, IX.

(私は彼を交通壕を通つて向ふへ行かせるも良いと思つた)

- (19) You wouldn't wish it *otherwise*.

—Galsworthy, *Swan Song*, III. ix.

(あなたにしても、さうより外にはお望みになりませぬ)

- (20) I want the whole thing *out*.

—Galsworthy, *Flowering Wilderness*, XV.

(私は何もかも公けにしたいのです)

(1) 尙二三の例を追加すると、Then he turned to his house door and let himself in; and even as he shut the door *to*...—Morris, *News from Nowhere*, I; ...and pulled Lot into the house *to* them, and shut *to* the door.—*Genesis*, x. 10; Curt...slams the door *to* with a crash.—Eugene O'Neill, *The First Man*, III. の如きがある。此第二例に於ける *to* の位置に就いては、例(7)の *afame* の位置と共に、p. 356 の脚註(2)を参照せられたい。尙、古い時代に用ひられた同じ *to* の例をいくつか示して見ると、Monster, lay *to* your fingers: help *to* bear this away.—Shakespeare, *The Tempest*, IV. i. 252; ...then must he put *to* more strength.—*Ecclesiastes*, x. 10; He that hath received his testimony hath set *to* his seal that God is true.—*John*, iii. 33. の如きがある。凡て此 *to* は、元來動詞の接頭語であつたものが、丁度今日の獨逸語の所謂分離動詞に於ける接頭語の如く、分離して出來た副詞である。それから、§ 53 の例(16)の脚註に注意した *to come to* に対しては、此處には I will bring her *to*.—Mrs. Stowe, *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, XXXIII. の如きが記憶されるべきである。

(2) p. 344 の脚註(1)参照。

乃ち知る、吾々は、若し現代英語に於ける事實の認識さへ正確であるならば、Shakespeare の如き古典を讀んでも、或學者の示した様な醜態を演ずる理由は無い筈である。若しそれ、これ等の適正なる觀察に依つて補語たるものの本質を知り、それが通常副詞としてのみ説かるべきものと、髣髴の間に連なるものであることを體得し、更にひいては、言語なるものが一箇の連續體であつて、その素材たるものは、單語と言はず、句と言はず、凡て生々脈々として振動して居るものであることを悟るよすがともなるならば、讀者の勞は酬いられたと言ふべきであらう。

精英文法汎論第一卷終

補 遺

【公私多端、學窓家閑の間に處し、零碎の時を偷み、二年の長きに亘つて斷續的に書きつづけて來た本書は、今顧みてこれを通覽すれば頗る意に満たざるものが多い。すなはち、まだまだ言ひたい事、説きたい事、記録に残して置きたい事は山とあるのであるが、既に多きに過ぎる極みのある頁數を、尙この上に多く増すことをはばかる故に、特に重要なりと思惟する點のみに就いて、若干の事柄を追加するだけに止める。日常隨ろげにしか氣附いて居ない事柄は勿論、知つて居る分つて居ると思ひ込んで居る事柄でも、いざとなると、確實にこれを指呼すること難く、的確にこれを説明することの出來ないのが、吾々の常に經驗するところであるが故に。】

1. p. 3, 脚註 (1). Shan't be long. の用例は吾々の隨所に發見するところであるが、その一二を指摘するならば、Priestley, *The Good Companions*, I. iv. 4; Galsworthy, *Maid in Wailing*, XVIII. 等に出る。尙、前書 I. v. 3; 後書 XXVIII. には I shan't be long. といふのも見える。尙、See you to-morrow. はよく聞く言葉であるが、Priestley, *The Taxi and the Star* の中に、Well, see you at eleven to-morrow morning. といふのがある。

2. p. 52, 脚註 (1). 此處に指摘した show の用法は、日常普通のものである。尙、念の爲實例を示して置く。

(1) At the far end of the shed near the street a speck of pink light showed in the darkness.

—Joyce, *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man*, II.

(街路に近い小屋の向ふの端の處に、暗闇の中に一點のぼつと赤い光が見えた)

(2) Red squares showed through the trees.

—Virginia Woolf, *The Years*, p. 54 (Hogarth Press).

(赤い四角いものが樹々の間を通して見えた)

3. p. 71, 脚註. The rich が單數に取扱はれた例を引いた序に、今一つの類例を出して置かう。

Then *the blind is leading the blind.*⁽¹⁾

—Galsworthy, *Maid in Waiting*, XVI.

(さうすりや、盲人が盲人の手引きをして居るわけだ)

それから、今一つ序を以て、the の附いた形容詞の名詞性を一層明かにする。用例を示して置く。

Shirin might have led a life abhorrent to *the church-going virtuous.*—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, IV. i.

(シリーンは、そりや或は、教會通ひをする善男善女には憎むべきものと思はれる様な生活をしたかも知れません)

4. p. 77, 例 (17). to the best of one's ability は一般周知の成句であるが、次の如きも常遇の類句である。

(1) It might be wearisome for folk who cannot look at Lorna, to hear the story all in speech, exactly as she told it; therefore let me put it shortly, *to the best of my remembrance.*—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XIX.

(其話を、ローナが物語つた通りに、凡てその言葉で聞かされることは、彼女を眼の當りに見ることの出来ない人には、或は退屈な事であるかも知れない。だから、一つ私の記憶の及ぶ限り、それを手短かにかいつまんで記録することにしよう)

(2) In the present instance I am forced to admit that the facts are, *to the best of my belief*, unique.

—Doyle, *The Red-Headed League*.

(當面の問題の場合に於いては、私は事實が、自分の信ずる限りではどうも無類だといふことを認めざるを得ない)

(1) Cf. *And thou shalt grope at noonday, as the blind gropeth in darkness.*—*Deuteronomy*, xxviii. 29.

(3) But she made me swear that I was telling her the truth *to the best of my knowledge.*

—Francis Stuart, *The Bridge*, XVII.

(然し其女は、私が自分の知識の及ぶ限り眞實を話して居るのだといふことを誓はせました)

次に、稍變つたのでは、⁽¹⁾

(4) Her example and a natural schoolboy voracity soon overcame my nervousness of her, even to the extent of allowing me to enjoy *to the best of my bent* so rare a spread.—De la Mare, *Seaton's Aunt*.

(其婦人が率先して示してくれたお手本と、又、自分本來の學生一流の大食癖の爲に、私は間もなく其婦人に對するおつおづした氣持を忘れてしまつて、かくも類ひ稀な御馳走を、氣の向くままに思ふ存分味ふまでにさへなつた)

の如きがある。尙、序に言ふが、例 (19), (20) にも類句が多い。例へば、

(1) That⁽²⁾ we did, we did for *the best.*⁽³⁾

—Shakespeare, *Coriolanus*, IV. vi. 143-4.

(吾々のした事は、一番良かれとてしたのです)

(2) Let us prepare for *the worst* and hope for *the best.*

—Stanley Baldwin's *Parliamentary Speeches*.

(吾々は最悪に備へ、最善の希望を抱くべきであります)

の如きである。總じて形容詞の比較級・最上級が、所示の如く名詞相當語として用ひられることは、本文に述べた通り極めて普通の事で、枚舉

(1) 更に又、I never had any wit, mother, and never set eyes on thee before, *to the furthest of my knowledge.*—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XVIII. の如きも注意すべき用例である。

(2) That=What.

(3) Cp. I think that all will agree with me, that I acted for *the wisest.*—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XXVIII.

に違が無いが、尙、参考の爲、數箇の常用句に含まるるものを引いて置かう。

- (1) And I will strive with things impossible,
Yea, get *the better* of them.

—Shakespeare, *Julius Cæsar*, II. i. 325-6.

(さうすれば私は不可能事とも闘ひます、いやそれのみか、それに打克つて見せます)

- (2) At home and abroad your aim is to get *the best* of everybody.—Meredith, *The Egoist*, XVII.

(國の中外を問はず、あなたの目ざすところは、あらゆる人を克服することです)

- (3) Then he will have *the worst* of it.

—Sheridan, *The School for Scandal*, III. iii.

(ちや、彼は負けるだらうぜ)

- (4) If *the worst* comes to *the worst*,⁽¹⁾ I can aid him.

—Weyman, *The Abbess of Vlaye*, III.

(いよいよ最悪の場合となれば、私が彼を助けてやる事が出来ます)

5. p. 82, 例 (5). *out of the common* も極めて普通の成句であるが、*out of the ordinary* も亦非常に多い。今、一二の例を追加すれば、

- (1) I confess that when first I made acquaintance with Charles Strickland I never for a moment discerned that there was in him anything *out of the ordinary*.

—Maugham, *The Moon and Sixpence*, I.

(私はあからさまに言ふが、初めてチャールズ・ストリックランドと近附きになつた時には、あの男に何人並みはづれたところがあると

(1) Cp. She might have to hold by me, *when the worst* came to the worst of it.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XX.

は、かりそめにも思ひませんでした)

- (2) When I reflect on all that happened later, I ask myself if I was thick-witted not to see that there was in Charles Strickland at least something *out of the common*.

—*ibid.*, VIII.

(その後あつた事共を想ひかへして見ると、チャールズ・ストリックランドに少くとも多少は並はずれの點があると氣附かなかつたとは、私も頭が悪かつたのかと自分に問ふことです)

此二つの文は、同じ作者が、同一人物に關して同一の事を言つて居るので、以て此兩様の言ひ方には何等意味上の差異の無いことが分かるであらう。

6. p. 82, 脚註 (1). *at last*; *at least* が中古英語の *atte laste*; *atte leste* から來たもので、其 *atte* の *-te* が *the* の崩れたものであることは、英語音韻上確實に認められる事柄であるが、同時に又、*the* の無い形の古く存在して居たことも事實である。例へば、

- (1) ...and bæd Eadward cyng scyp fultumes þæt sceolde beon *at læstan* · L · scypa.

—*Anglo-Saxon Chronicle* (D), A. D. 1049.

(=and prayed King Edward (for) naval support that should be at least fifty ships).

- (2) *At last*, quan it was ouer-gon.

—*Genesis and Exodus* (ab. 1250), I. 3031.

(=At last, when it was gone over).

蓋し、これ等は *the* の存在しなかつた、又は稀用に屬して居た古い時代の殘影である。⁽¹⁾

(1) 序に *last* の名詞性を強く表はす一例を引いて置く。They (=Some kind of books) fall in a few months or years...or they sink to the level of "documents" for the historian and sociologist; even, *at long last*, for the antiquarian.—*Modern Language Notes* (Jan., 1941), p. 70.

7. p. 83, 脚註 (1). earnest は元來名詞であつたといふことに誤りは無いが、然し、形容詞としての用法も早く古代英語の時代からあつたといふことを申添へて置きたい。尙、序に本文に示した in earnest は、屢 in good earnest; in real earnest として意味の強められることも記憶されたい。例へば、

(1) It was no feint, but a surprise meditated in good earnest.—Prescott, *The Reign of Philip II*, II. vi.

(それは決して偽勢ではなく、眞面目に熟慮した上での奇襲であつた)

(2) But one thing I tell thee in real earnest.

—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XXXIX.

(然し一つの事を私は本當に眞實にお話します)

の如くである。

8. p. 87, (6). 名詞相當語としての副詞の中、特に注意に値するのは、every now and then; every now and again 等である。これ等は副詞句を成すのであるが、now, then, again 等は、every を採ることに依つて、一應は名詞相當語とせられ、それが更に § 41, (1) に依つて副詞の役を勤めるのである。今、若干の例を引くと、

(1) Every now and then⁽¹⁾ his hands would go up to his bare head.—Galsworthy, *Maid in Waiting*, XXVIII.

(時々彼の手は帽子を被らない頭の方へ上げられるのであつた)

(2) Every now and again⁽²⁾ I've had a first-class row with Madame.—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, III. iii.

(再三私は奥方と、とてもすばらしい船こぎをしたことがあります)

(1) Cp. "Queen, queen!" they were shouting, here and there, and now and then.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, VIII. 次頁の例 (3) 比較。

(2) Cp. Now and again ladies pass in their pattens.—Barrie, *Quality Street*, I, Stage Direction.

の如く、これより稍用例の少ないものとしては、

(3) Every here and there, for a few hundred yards, it lay submerged below the stagnant waters of the fen.

—Stevenson, *The Black Arrow*, I. ii.

(此處彼處と數百ヤードの地域に亘つて、それは沼澤地の溜り水の下に没して居た)

の如きが注意されなければならない。⁽¹⁾

9. p. 89, 例 (14). 此處に擧げた for long に対しては、時々用ひられる for always (=for ever) を注意することも徒爾ではあるまい。例へば、

(1) I don't love you for a day or a week, Violet; I love you for always.—Maugham, *The Constant Wife*, II.

(ヴァイオレット、私はお前を一日か二日愛するのではない。永久に愛するのです)

(2) Although Tony had been longing for weeks to get away from Vine House, he had never thought of leaving it for always.—Aldington, *All Men are Enemies*, I. ix.

(トニーは幾週もの間ヴァイン・ハウスから出たい出たいと思つて居たが、永久に去らうとは、つひぞ思つたことも無かつたのだ)

の如きである。for ever がこれと全く同一の構成を有するものであると

(1) 尙、every now and then (again) は、十七世紀頃用ひられた ever now and then (again) の訛つたものと思はれるが、久しく every を附けることが成立して居るのであるから、又、一方 every here and there があるのであるから、今は區別する理由あるを認め難い。次に、米國には every once in a while といふ句が行はれるのであるが、今私は例を拵はせて居らないし、又、英國にもありや否やを知らない。それはとにかくとして、此句に於ける once も、上の now, then 等と同様の文法的地位に立つものである。それから最後に、これは此處に説くものとは異り、§ 41, (1) のものであるが、序を以て言つて置くに、米國には every which way (=in every direction) といふ珍しい句がある。一例を擧げると、The fences was made of different kinds of boards, nailed on at different times; and they leaned every which way.—Mark Twain, *Huckleberry Finn*, XXI. の如くである。

とは言ふまでもなく、又、

- (3) Then the *Imperial News*, with which, like two million other Britons, he spent Sunday mornings, for *once*⁽¹⁾ gave him no pleasure.—Priestley, *The Good Companions*, I. i. 3.

(彼が、他の二百萬英國民と同じく、日曜日の午前を讀んで過ごした帝國新聞も、此時ばかりは彼に何の悦びも與へなかつた)

等も思ひ出されて良く、⁽²⁾ at *once* も亦同様である。

10. p. 90, 例 (18). ups and downs の序に、今一つ似た形式の ins and outs を注意して置く。

He fell in love with her at first sight, and simply carried her off. No one ever knew the *ins* and *outs*-of it.

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, II. i.

(彼は一目見ただけで彼女に戀をして、さつと手に入れてしまつたの。詳しい事は誰も知らないの)

11. p. 91, 例 (21). 此例以下「時」に関するもののみに偏したから、此處に「距離」に就いての等似例を追加する。

- (1) You have ridden far to-day, Cousin Ridd; and have far to ride to get home.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, L.

(あなたは今日は遠く馬に乗つていらしたのですわ、リッド兄さん、それにお歸りになるには又随分お乗りにならなければなりません)

- (2) They knew their way and had not far to go.

—Baring-Gould, *The Broom-Squire*, III.

(1) Cp. Go into the next room for *this once*.—Wycherley, *Gentleman Dancing-master*, II. ii.

(2) 尙、And that (=when) he calls for drink, I'll have prepared him / A chalice for the *nonce*.—Shakespeare, *Hamlet*, IV. vii. 160-1. 参照。此 for the *nonce* といふ句は、中古英語の頃 for the *nonces* と言つた (cf. Chaucer, *The Canterbury Tales*, A 379) のであるが、それは元々 for *then ones* から來たものであり、其 then は that の與格の一形である。然るに、語尾の -n が誤つて ones の方へ移された (cp. Ned < M.E. min Edward [=my Edward]; newt < O.E. *an efeta*) のである。ones は勿論後の once である (p. 196 の脚註参照)。尙、Hardy, *The Dynasts*, I. VI. vii には on the *nonce* がある。

(彼等は道を知つて居たし、又、遠くへ行くのではなかつた)

これ等も、本文に出たものと同様、極めて普通の用法である。尙、これとは稍異なる場合ではあるが、副詞が名詞相當語として現はれる次の如き常用句の場合をも注意して置く。

- (3) Lorna makes too *much* of me, and the rest they make too *little*.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, IX.

(ローナは私を重んじ過ぎるし、他の人達は輕んじ過ぎる)

尙、これに就いては、p. 191 の脚註 (2) の that much 参照。

12. p. 100, 例 (9). 此處に far from normal といふ例を出した時、私はこれを大して問題とするに足りないと思つて居たのであるが、その後、意外にも此形が雑誌『英語青年』で大きな論議の問題となつたから、此處に私見を披瀝して教を乞ふこととする。尤も、私がこれを本節 (4)、即ち多くの形容詞が名詞相當語として用ひらるる場合に加へず、別に動詞や接續詞が名詞相當語となる場合と同列に置いた點を考へて下さつたならば、更めて多言を要せずして愚見は明かになるものと思ふが、尙、敢て一言すれば、此場合の normal は次の例 (10) の playful と共に、形容詞の表はす意味を、端的にそのまま名詞的に意識したことを示す⁽¹⁾ので、それは決して前出の the *rich*; the *poor* や、*Deep calleth*

(1) 斯の如き意識の表明は、言語の原始的状態に歸つた姿とも言はれ得る。同時に又、それは新しき文法とへと推移する發始的一段階ともなるものである。此點に就いては、我が國語に於ける『サ行變格』に屬する動詞の成立を考へて見るもよく、隣邦の人達が『あなたなぜ泣くありますか。何悲しいありますか』等言ふこと等も參考とするに足る。和譯聖書の中に多くの此種の語法の採られて居ることは一般周知の事である。又、吾々が日本語の中に英語の如き外國語を混用する時、例へば『plainly に speak する』『fast の反對に slowly が良い』等言ふのも等似の現象である。『某國強大を誇る』の如きは、漢文の訓法を通して今では一般に認められると思ふが、『我が條件の公正妥當にも拘らず』『時局の重大を反映して』(昭和十六年三月一日 JOBK の放送に流れて來た言葉)の如きは、今日では相當廣く行はれる様になつたが、これは我が國語の一展開であると共に、此處に論じて居るところと一脈相通するもののあるものとして注意するに足る。

unto *deep* 等と同一ではない。⁽¹⁾ 斯の如き語法を *far from being...* の *being* が省略されたものだといふことは、これまで屢言はれた事であるが、その正しくないことは、Jespersen もほのめかして居る (*Modern English Grammar*, IV, p. 387) 通りである。蓋し、斯の如き説は、言語の實際に盲目的演繹論の産物に他ならないのである。又、Jespersen は *far from* を此組合せに於いてのみ考へ、それが度合ひを表はすものなるが故に形容詞を伴ひ得ると説いて居るが、私には此説も劃切なりとは思はれない。それは、解剖臺上の観察と研究とが、多くの貴い事柄を知らしめるにも拘らず、細胞の活動状態に於ける生理現象乃至病理現象をそのままに示してくれないと同様、一箇の眞を含む一見解たるには相違なからうが、未だ以て生きた英語の活きた説明であるとは考へ難いからである。なるほど *far from* は、結果的に見れば *not at all* の意味になると言つて良いが、かの文に於ける補語の文法的重點は明かに *far* にあることを認めなければならないのである。而して、斯の如き用法は甚だ廣く行はれて居るのであつて、舉例の繁に堪へない位であるが、今、試に數箇の實例を引いて、考察の資料とすることにしよう。⁽²⁾

(1) He is far from *rich*.—Doyle, *The Naval Treaty*.

(あの人はまるで裕福ではないのだ)

(2) I was still far from *satisfied*.

—Doyle, *The Resident Patient*.

(1) 尤も、いつも言ふ様に、言語は一連の活動で、凡ては一なるものなるが故に、斯の如き近接地位に立つものの場合に於いては、そこにその間に明瞭なる一線の劃し難き場合の存すべきことは、確と覺悟して置かなければならない。例へば、*Fair is foul, and foul is fair*. の如きは此處に説くものと極めて近いが如きである。

(2) もつと固い文章に於ける例としては、*Court English itself was far from uniform*.—Gordon, *Shakespeare's English*, p. 4; *Its influence was still far from negligible*.—Crawford, *Anglo-Saxon Influence on Western Christendom*, I. の如きがある、又副詞の附いた例では (p. 344 の説明参照) *I'm sorry to see him looking far from well*.—Gissing, *A Poor Gentleman*. の如きがある。Cp. *And yet I need not tell you that my mind was far from at ease*.—Doyle, *The Five Orange Pips*.

(私はそれでも尙、てんで満足ではなかつた)

(3) Hurt vanity and exploded complacency...are very far from *ludicrous*.—Aldous Huxley, *Two or Three Graces*.

(自負心の破られること、自己満足の感が一舉に蠶消させられることは、到底面白可笑しいどころの話ではない)

(4) The young woman, slender and far from *stupid-looking*.—Galsworthy, *Flowering Wilderness*, I.

(瘦型の、どう見ても鈍いとは思へない若い女)

尙、序を以て、此處に更に數箇の類似の場合を指摘することの甚だ有意義なるべきを思ふ。先づ第一に思ひ出でられるのは、上記の *far from* と等意に結果する *anything but* に續く場合である。例へば、

(5) The battle was a sore one, and the victory *anything but secure*.—Hawthorne, *The Scarlet Letter*, IX.

(其闘ひは痛ましい闘ひで、勝利はとても確實でないものであつた)

(6) The new station was a squalid brick and varnished deal construction, looking like an abortive Swiss chalet which had never been anything but *shabby*.

—Aldington, *All Men are Enemies*, I. ii.

(新しい停車場といふのは、瑞西のシャレーの出来損ひの、未だ曾てみすぼらしからざることのなかつた様に見える、半煉瓦半松材にワニスを塗つた、うすぎたない建物であつた)

(7) It's a thing that makes me realise that though Madame can be as wicked as you please, there's some part inside her which is anything but *wicked*.

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, III. iii.

(それは、奥方はどの位にでも悪徳になれはするが、その爲人(ば)の中には、どこかしら悪いとはどうしても言へない點のあることを、私に充分悟らせる事があります)

(8) It was anything but *satisfactory*.

—Wells, *Brynhild*, IX. i.

(それは到底満足ではなかつた)

の如く、用例は殆んどいくらでもある。(1) 次に注意すべきは little short of; (2) next to; near to; anything like; instead of 及び類意の句に續くもの、例へば、

(9) Cibber's positive contributions are little short of *meagre*.

—Aldington, *Stepping Heavenward*, II.

(シッパ-の積極的貢献は、先づ貧弱と言つて差支への無い位のものであつた)

(10) Considering the storm and stress of his mind, this is little short of *miraculous*.—*ibid.*

(彼の心中の動亂と緊張とを思へば、これは奇蹟的と言つてもあながち誤りのある事ではなかつた)

(11) Is she not a young lady scarce eighteen, of extraordinary beauty, her stature next to *low*, and in mourning?

—Wycherley, *Love in a Wood*, II. iv.

(それはまだ十八になるかならずの、すばぬけて美しい、みだけはまあ低い方で、そして喪服を着た方ぢやありませんか)

(12) It must have been next to *miraculous* if they had escaped.—Defoe, *Robinson Crusoe*, II.

(若し彼等が無事にのがれたとすれば、それは奇蹟に近い事であつたに違ひない)

(1) 私は、明治三十六年九月、東京外國語學校に入學して間も無い頃、村井知至先生から、會話の時間に Now, the First Avenue is *anything but a pleasant part* of New York. といふ文を教へていただいたことを、今尙昨日の如くに覚えて居るが、これ等も此際多少参考とするに足る様に思はれる。Cp. also: Mahbub was anything but *asleep*.—Kipling, *Kim*, VIII. 前々頁脚註 (2) の末段参照。

(2) Jespersen は *A Modern English Grammar*, IV, p. 389 に於いて Kaye-Smith, *The End of the House of Alard* から He's been *short of shy and hungry*. といふ例を引いて居るが、斯の如きは、氏自身も認めて居る通り、甚だ稀である。

(13) ...and though, with diligence and good luck, he may be rich in time, it is next to *impossible*⁽¹⁾ that he should have realized anything yet.—Austen, *Emma*, IV.

(そして勤勉であり又幸運に恵まれたならば、彼はやがてそのうちに金持になれようが、今までに何物かをしかと我物にした等といふ事は先づあり得ない事です)

(14) He was young, and his face, if not exactly handsome, approached so near to *handsome* that...

—Hardy, *The Return of the Native*, I. ii.

(彼は若かつた、そしてその顔は正しく美しいとは言へないまでも餘程それに近く、それで...)

(15) My neighbour struck me as bordering on *repulsive*.

—Emily Brontë, *Wuthering Heights*, II.

(私の隣りの人は、人に嫌悪の情を起さしめるに近い様に思へた)

(16) The £ 600 a-year...I do not look upon as anything like *adequate*.—Bentham's *Works*, X, p. 237.

(年六百鎊位では、私は到底妥當とは認めない)

(17) Things would be worse instead of *better*.

—Maugham, *The Moon and Sixpence*, X.

(事は良くなるどころか却つて益悪くなるだらうと思ひます)

(18) They might have been scarlet instead of *white* as snow.

—Galsworthy, *Over the River*, XXII.

(あの人達は雪の様に眞白でなくて、まつかになつたかも知れないわよ)

(1) next to の次には impossible が最も普通である。尙、これも明治三十六年に私が村井先生から教へていただいた會話中の文であるが、I have brought *next to nothing*. 等も序に参考として添へて置く。next to は結果から見れば almost と同意であるが、これも英語の表現心理から言へば、尙 next に目的の重點があるものと言つた方が妥當である。勿論、多くの用法が發達するうちに、種々移推の起ることは言ふまでもない。Cp. All will...ride somewhere, in *next to no* time.—Thoreau, *Walden, Economy*.

の如きである。これ等の場合、形容詞の前に立つ語群は、結果的には副詞又はそれと等しいの價値を有すると見て良いが、⁽¹⁾ 一般に抽象的表現の發達した英語の心理⁽²⁾に鑑みれば、形容詞に名詞性の賦與されて居るとは否むべくもなく、然もそれは、本節(4)に集めたものとは性質を異にし、頗る臨時性の高いものである。今一度振り返つて、本文の例(10)と比較考量せられたい。⁽³⁾

然るに、此處に今一つ、廣く一般に用ひらるるものとして、是非とも注意しなければならない類似の用法がある。それは all but に續く次の

(1) 例へば、far from; anything but は not at all に、little short of; next to 等は almost に、instead of は rather than に略匹敵すると言ひ得るが如くである。更に注意される事は、instead of はかく解釋しても、尙、次に來る形容詞の名詞性は喪失し盡さない様に思はれることである(此句に副詞句の伴ふことは p. 93 の脚註に一言した。副詞の來り得ることは言ふまでもない)。Cp. It is no more than reasonable.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XXIII; I am more than content.—Wilde, *The Importance of Being Earnest*, III; Am I nothing more than bitter-tongued?—Wells, *Brynhild*, IV. i. Cp. also: The establishment I can offer would be any other than highly desirable.—Austen, *Pride and Prejudice*, XIX. 尙、more than の次に形容詞の附くことを、N.E.D. には from 16c. onward と言つてあるけれども、實際はもつともつと古くからあつた事で、十三世紀初頭の *Ancrene Riwle* に既に Nis (=is not) he more pen amed (=more than mad) が出る。それから more than の次には、Her small room was more than usually full.—Maugham, *The Moon and Sixpence*, IV. の如く副詞の來ることのあるのみでなく、又、I never more than glanced at her.—De la Mare, *Miss Duveen*. に於けるが如く、動詞の來ることもあるが、instead of の次には、不定詞(p. 63 の脚註参照)以外には此事が少い。

(2) 抽象的表現といふことは、これを詳論すれば長くなるが、一例を以つて言へば、昔専ら animals of every kind (O.E. *gehwylyces cynnes dēor*) と言つたのを、今日では多くは every kind of animals と、animals を表面に出さずに、kind をこれに代らせる如き事を言ふのである。Cf. I believe he reclaimed fifty acres of fen.—Kaye-Smith, *Iron and Smoke*, III. xii; Margaret would make an excellent wife for another type of man.—Aldington, *All Men are Enemies*, III. i. I'm not at all that sort of man.—Mallock, *The New Republic*, I. iii. の如きを、I am not at all a man of that sort. と言へば具象的となり、若し又、I am far from that sort of man. と言つたとすれば、抽象性が極度に高くなる。尙、p. 405 の脚註(2)参照。

(3) Cp. also: It was between pretty and beautiful.—Hardy, *The Return of the Native*, I. iv; The crowd cheered like mad for the Patriarch.—Evelyn Waugh, *Black Mischief*, VII. 序に言ふが、此 like mad は極めて普通の句である。Cf. Thence by coach, with a mad coachman, that drove like mad.—Pepy's *Diary*, 13 June, 1663; There was the Government, borrowing money like mad.—Aldington, *A Gentleman of England*, I.

如きである。

(19) These were all but *unknown* to Greeks and Romans.

—Stanley, *The History of the Jewish Church*, V.

(これ等は希臘人や羅馬人には殆んど知られて居なかつた)

(20) The ordinary man, with a silk hat on his head, at once becomes sober, austere and all but *honest*.

—Robert Lynd, *Hats*.

(世間並みの人でもシルクハットをかぶると、忽ち眞面目で、威嚴のある、そして殆んど眞直ぐな人となる)

これ等の場合に於いても、これを發生的に説明すれば、上記の諸場合と異ること無く、形容詞は名詞相當語として用ひられたものなのであるが、⁽¹⁾ 然し、現代の英語に於いては、それよりも却つて all but (=almost) の副詞性が高くなつたものと認められる⁽²⁾ことを知らなければならぬ。而して、此事は通俗語乃至方言に於ける、次の如き kind of; sort of の場合に於いて最も顯著である。⁽³⁾

(1) Cp. Saturday chilled the cuckoo into all but *silence*.—Robert Lynd, *The Nightingale Arrives*. 尙、Only the all but *miraculous* meeting of two equal loves, two equally confiding temperaments can bring fulfilment to that longing.—Aldous Huxley, *Two or Three Graces*. の如きは、p. 58 の例(7)に現はれたものと共に、更に参考とするに足る様に思はれる。

(2) 此點に關して最も注意すべき事は、此言ひ方の次には動詞の來ることの甚だ屢であることである。例へば、Two dogs.../ All but *won* that desperate game.—Scott, *The Lady of the Lake*, I. 120-3; She all but *shut* her eyes at me.—De la Mare, *Seaton's Aunt*. 尙一つの例が p. 54, (2) の例(4)に出た。Cp. She *as good as* killed my mother.—De la Mare, *Seaton's Aunt*. これ等を次の如きものと比較考量することは有益である。He had never *done* anything but *make* her miserable.—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, II. iii.

(3) これ等が動詞の前に立つことの最も多いこと、並にそれが屢 *kinda*, *kinder*, *sorta*, *sorter* となること等は、此際最も注意すべきである。用例は私の手許にあるだけでも數へきれない位であるが、只數箇のものを引いて置かう。Yes, I *kind of* think I have.—Stevenson, *Treasure Island*, VIII; Might be a good idea to *sort of* take a high hand with him.—Priestley, *Laburnum Grove*, I; Old folks get *kinda* excited about a grandchild.—Aldington, *Nobody's Baby*, II; Sanna be always at her about this and about that, and it *kinder* bewilders the wench.—Baring-Gould, *The Broom-Squire*, XXIX.

(21) He spoke *kind of* fierce and eager.
—Stevenson, *The Beach of Falesá*, II.

(彼は幾分荒々しい、やつきとなつた口調で話した)

(22) Only I feel *sort of* lonesome.
—Bennett, *The Grand Babylon Hotel*, VI.

(只私は多少淋しい様な感じがするだけです)

まだまだ言ひたい事が無いではないが、餘りに長くなるからこれ位にして置く。

13. p. 100, 例 (11). 此場合の sharp は quickly を意味する。尙、此言ひ方は、古くから用ひられる

Mum's the word.—Miss Mulock, *Agatha's Husband*, XXII.

(おだまりついでいふの)

に倣つて廣まつた言ひ方だと言つて良い。而して、かかる場合の *mum* は、沈黙を呼ぶ間投詞で、全體は『沈黙が標語だ』といふ意である。⁽¹⁾

14. p. 100, 例 (16). 副詞が名詞相當語として主語に立つ例で、次の如きも記憶に値する。

Slowly does it now.—Galsworthy, *Maid in Waiting*, XXVIII.

(ゆるゆるが成功の秘訣だ)

これは、諺にある *It's dogged does it* (どこまでも辛抱強くやるに限る)⁽²⁾ に似せた言ひ方である。

15. p. 103, 脚註 (1). *kind of you* の代りに *kind in you* を

(1) Cp. "And remember," he whispered impressively, "the word is—" "*Mum*," replied Hubert.—Priestley, *Adventure*. 尙、上記の言葉は、その性質上多くは *is* を省略體で *'s* と書くのが普通であるが、又、さうでないものもある。Cf. Nay, *mum* is the word.—Stevenson, *The Black Arrow*, I. iii.

(2) *dogged* の次に *that* を入れて見る。又、實際に入れて言ふこともあるし、又、次の如きもある。それから *dogged* が形容詞で、*tenacious*, *pertinacious* を意味することは言ふまでもない。Cf. *It's dogged as (=that) does it. It's not thinking about it.*—Trollope, *The Last Chronicle of Barset*, LXI. *does it* の *it* は、何か當面の仕事を指し、*does* は *accomplishes* の意。

使つた例を若干追加して置く。

(1) It is unkind *in you* to suspect me.
—Fielding, *Tom Jones*, II. ix.

(私を疑ふとは、君ひどいよ)

(2) How good it was *in you*, my dear Mr. Bennet!
—Austen, *Pride and Prejudice*, I.

(なんと御親切だつたのでせう、あなたは、ベネットさん)

(3) It would have been wiser *in me* to have kept away altogether.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XLI.

(全く近寄らなかつたら、もつと賢明であつたであらう)

(4) I should take it as very kind *in you* if you would allow me to be the showman of our new world to you.

—Morris, *News from Nowhere*, II.

(私に吾々の新しい世界の案内役をさせて下さるなら、誠に難有い事と存じます)

16. p. 108, (f). p. 117 の例 (7) には *trousers' pocket* の實例を挙げながら、此處には *trouser pocket* といふ言ひ方の存在を示しただけで、實例を引かなかつたのは片手落であつたと思ふから、此處に後者の一例を引いて置く。⁽¹⁾

We found Holmes pacing up and down in the field, his chin sunk upon his breast, and his hands thrust into his *trouser* pockets.—Doyle, *The Reigate Squires*.

(行つて見るとホームズは、顎を胸に垂れ、両手をズボンのポケットにつつこんで原つ場をあちこち歩いて居た)

17. p. 113, (3). 屬格の名詞、並にこれに準じて見らるべき所有代名詞の表はす意味と、それが持つ意義とは、略これを盡したのである

(1) 尙、序に、次の如き言ひ方も普通であることを注意して置く。He put his hand into his *trousers* pocket and pulled out a handful of coins.—Baring-Gould, *The Broom-Squire*, I.

が、尙、次の二つの事柄を追加して置く。

(a) Your は、時に漠然と相手方の注意を引くだけの爲に用ひられ、且、屢その付けられた名詞の表はすものに對する、言者の輕侮の心持を漂はす。例へば、

(1) *Your* serpent of Egypt is bred now of *your* mud by the operation of *your* sun: so is *your* crocodile.

—Shakespeare, *Antony and Cleopatra*, II. vii. 29-31.

(エジプトの蛇といふやつは、あの日光の作用で、あの泥の中から生れるのだよ。例の鱒魚といふやつも同様だ)

(2) There are more things in heaven and earth, Horatio, Than are dreamt of in *your*⁽¹⁾ philosophy.

—Shakespeare, *Hamlet*, I. v. 166-7.

(此天地にはな、ホレイショ、例の哲學の中に夢想されもしない事が數々とあるんだ)

(3) *Your* great Philosophers have been voluntarily poor.

—Burton, *The Anatomy of Melancholy*.

(かの大學者なるものは、自ら求めて貧乏をしたものだ)

(4) *Your* true wit despises the title of poet, as much as *your* true gentleman the title of knight.

—Wycherley *Love in a Wood*, II. i.

(所謂本當の才人なるものは詩人と言はれることを賤みます。丁度本當の紳士なるものが勳爵士の稱號を賤むのと同様にね)

(5) Villagers never swarm: a whisper is unknown among them, and they seem almost as incapable of an undertone as a cow or a stag. *Your* true rustic turns his back on his interlocutors.—Eliot, *Adam Bede*, II.

(村人といふものは決して群を成さない。彼等の間には私語といふ

(1) p. 400 末より次頁に亘る説明参照。

ものが無く、その小聲で話すことの殆んど出来ないことは、牛や鹿の場合と大體同じ様に思はれる。所謂本當の田舎人なるものは、物を言ひかける人とあると、そつぽを向いてしまふ)

(6) “As a rule,” said Holmes, “the more bizarre a thing is the less mysterious it proves to be. It is *your* commonplace, featureless crimes which are really puzzling.”

—Doyle, *The Red-Headed League*.

(ホームズが言ふには、「概して言へば、事が奇怪であれば、それだけ其事は實のところ不可解ではないものだ。本當に難物なのは、所謂月並的な、特徴の無い犯罪なんだ」)

の如くである。蓋しこれ等は、

(7) And what I am talking about is not these—these spasmodic sales. *Your* Phyllis Pelmetts are here to-day and gone to-morrow. They are daily-paper reputations.

—Wells, *Brynchild*, V. i.

(そして私が言つて居るのは此類ぢやないのです—此氣まぐれ的な賣行きぢやないんです。かのフィリス・ペルメットなんざの輩は、今日在るかと思へば明日は何處へ行つたやらです。彼等が輩はつまり日刊新聞から出る線香花火です)

の類と境を接して殆んど區別し難く、凡て感興屬格とも稱し得べきものである。即ち、それは p. 199 に説いた you に匹敵する意義を有するもので、

(8) Take up *your* Latin and Greek dictionaries, and find out the meaning of ‘Spirit.’

—Ruskin, *Sesame and Lilies*, *The Kings’ Treasuries*.

(一つ諸君の拉丁語並に希臘語の辭典を取つて、Spirit といふ語の意味の調べ出さない)

の如きもの、即ち、確實なる所有を意味するのではなく、所有すること

のあり得べき、⁽¹⁾ 或は使用し得べきものを指すものよりの一發展と見るべく、以て普通の *your* との連続関係も想見することが出来るのである。

(b) 他の人稱の所有代名詞に於いても、上記の *your* の或ものに近い用法を見る。例へば、

(1) ...if my gossip Report be an honest woman of her word.—Shakespeare, *The Merchant of Venice*, III. i. 7-8.

(若しあの噂といふやつが本當の事を傳へるものならば)

(2) *Our* medical guide...is like the hero in a melodrama; he always comes upon the scene just, and only just, in the nick of time.

—Jerome, *The Idle Thoughts, On Being Idle*.

(わがお醫者といふ奴は、メロドラマの主人公の様なもので、丁度今といふ際どい時、いや全く際どい時に初めて登場に及ぶものだ)

(3) A good Marksman will be sure to hit *his* Man at 20 Yards Distance.—Steele, *The Tattler*, XXXIX.

(手並のすぐれた狙ひ手といふものは、二十ヤード隔てても必ず相手を射當てるものです)

(4) Mr. Patch has known *his* Chaucer a long time.

—*Modern Language Notes* (Jan., 1941), p. 70.

(パッチ氏は長い間チャーサーに親しんで来た)

の如き皆此類に屬する。これ等は、言ふまでもなく、小説家等が *our* hero 等言ふ場合のものとして極めて密接な關係に立つもので、兩者は時に殆んど區別し難い。尙、序に言ふが、前項の例 (2) に引いた Hamlet の有名な言葉に於ける *your* は、今日一般に行はれて居る刊本には斯く

(1) *Brynild* には、上に引いた文の直ぐ上に (Methuen 社版、1937, p. 55) これに類する例が見える。即ち、It's a good spring for Phyllis Pelmet just as it may be a good spring for bluebells. Are you a gardener, Mr. Palace? One year the bluebells make a delightful patch under *your* beech-trees; the next year they are noxious weeds swarming all over *your* flower-beds. とあるのがそれである。

あるのであるが、それは 1605 年の Quarto 版に依つたもので、1623 年以降の Folio 諸版には *our* となつて居る。以て (a) と (b) との間に存する類似性を推するに難くないであらう。

18. p. 124, 例 (61). *Fingers-Ends* は古い例であるから、今一つ新しいものを引いて置く。⁽¹⁾

He has all the figures and details at his *fingers'* ends.

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, II. i.

(彼は數字も委細の事情もすつかり知りぬいて居ります)

19. p. 129, 脚註 (1). 年齢を言ふ場合に、古代英語では一般に *-wintre* を用ひたと言つたが、又、

He sylf wæs *on ylde eahta* and *pritiġ geara*.

—*Aelfric's Life of King Oswald*.

(=He himself was in age eight and thirty years)

の如き言ひ方もあつたことを追記して置く。尙、序に言ふ。今日最も普通の ...years old の語法は、1205 年頃の *Lazamon's Brut* に He was *fihtene zer⁽²⁾ ald*. として出るのが最も古い様である。

20. p. 134, (5). これは決して最適の場所ではないが、外に適當なる場所が無いから、便宜上、文法的と言はんよりも寧ろ修辭的に、二箇以上の連語が形容詞相當の役を勤める二つの場合を注意して置く。

(a) A *fox* of a man が A *fox-like* man 即ち、A *cunning* man の意に用ひられ、A *boy* of a captain が A *very young* captain を意

(1) 尙、*finger's end* は、大體更に古いと言つて良い。Cf. He forgetteth them not, but hath them at hys *finger's* ende.—*Latimer's Sermons*, III. 但、現代でも次の如きは多いことを注意して置く。Each was oppressively conscious of the other's presence, even to the *finger-ends*.—*Eliot, The Mill on the Floss*, VI. vi; But he had the answer at his *finger-ends*.—*Virginia Woolf, The Years*, p. 117 (Hogarth Press).

(2) 此語がこのままで複數であることに就いては、p. 129 の脚註 (1) の末段参照。

味し、又 *A labyrinth of a place; A perfect maze of houses* 等の多いことは人の知るところであるが、⁽¹⁾ 今少しく此類のものに就いて考察を試みることにする。元來此語法は、比喩的な言ひ方に起因するものたること疑ひ無く、従つて、『名詞+of+名詞』が何時もかく解すべきものでないことは言ふまでもない⁽²⁾が、色々のものが用ひらるるうちには、頗る自由な言ひ方を生じ、中には詩的な表現を産み、又、慣用的なものを見るに至つたのである。今、若干の普通な例を引くと、

(1) *Beast of a night*,⁽³⁾ Garson.—Barrie, *Half an Hour*.

(ガースン、ひどい〔天氣の〕夜だね)〜

(2) I hate that Claude Halnaker—a thorough *beast of a man*.⁽⁴⁾—Kaye-Smith, *Iron and Smoke*, II. vi.

(私はあのクロード・ハルネカーが大嫌ひ—どこまでも野獸の様な人だ)

(3) a mere *chit of a girl*⁽⁵⁾ as she was.

—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XLII.

(あの様にほんの小つぽけな少女)

(1) Cf. He suddenly halted...to find himself entangled in a *Labyrinth of scattered suburbs*.—Lytton, *The Last of the Barons*, I. iv; Bath then was a *maze of only four or five hundred houses*.—Macaulay, *The History of England*, III; He crossed Pall Mall and threaded the *maze of narrow streets*.—Galsworthy, *Flowering Wilderness*, X.

(2) 例へば、To my amazement what did she do but burst into a *flood of tears*!—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XIX; threading his way through the *streams of traffic*.—Galsworthy, *Over the River*, VI; The sun was shining whitely from behind a thin *fleece of cloud*.—De la Mare, *Miss Duveen*; He pressed his face upon the pillow in a *fury of misery*.—Lawrence, *Sons and Lovers*, II. viii. の如きを考へて見ると良い。

(3) Cp. *Beast of a day*!—Galsworthy, *Over the River*, XXII; *Beastly night for the men*.—Sassoon, *Memoirs of a Fox-hunting Man*, X. i. 因に、*Beastly weather* はよく用ひられる言ひ方である。

(4) Cp. It's filled with stinking bourgeoisie and hulking great *brutes of soldiers with girls*.—Aldington, *All Men are Enemies*, II. v.

(5) Cp. Martha Rodd was a mere *prim snippet of a maid*.—De la Mare, *The Almond Tree*; He remembered what a colorless *slip of a thing* she had looked.—Edith Wharton, *Ethan Frome*, III; a little dried-up *pippin of a man*.—Galsworthy, *Over the River*, XV.

(4) It's the *devil of a place*.⁽¹⁾

—Masefield, *The Taking of the Gry*, p. 98 (Heinemann).

(とてもひどい場所だ)

(5) Old F.-P. had a *devil of a job* to keep up decent appearance.—Aldington, *A Gentleman of England*, I.

(老 F.-P. は相當な體面を保つのに、随分骨が折れた)

(6) *Duffer of a woman*!—Lawrence, *Sons and Lovers*, I. vi.

(能無しの女つたら)

(7) A *id* now, of all days, the *fool of the maid*⁽²⁾ had cleared away everything.

—Edith Wharton, *The Day of the Funeral*, II.

(然るに今、日もあらうに此日に限つて、あのまぬけの女中は何もかも片付けてしまつたのだ)

(8) I had that old *fraud of an Armenian Archbishop* in here the other night.—Evelyn Waugh, *Black Mischief*, I.

(あのアルメニアのべてん和尚の奴が、先夜此處に来てたんです)

(9) I've not the *ghost of a chance*.⁽³⁾

—Virginia Woolf, *The Years*, p. 56. (Hogarth Press).

(私は見込みのみの字も無い)

(1) Cp. He paid a *devil of a price* for it too.—Maugham, *Our Betters*, II. Cp. also: It will want a *devil of a lot of explaining*, turning up like this.—Maugham, *Home and Beauty*, I; And then we thought probably you had the *devil of a lot of luggage yourself*.—Evelyn Waugh, *Black Mischief*, VI.

(2) 我が國語で言ふ、『田中の馬鹿』・『女中のまぬけ』等比較。

(3) Cp. *Ghost of a mother—thinnest fantasy of a mother*.—Hawthorne, *The Scarlet Letter*, XI; The *ghost of a smile* appeared on Soames's face.—Galsworthy, *The Man of Property*, II. v; Oh! for a day on a horse at Condaford and forget these swamps and poor ghastly *skeletons of mules*.—Galsworthy, *Maid in Waiting*, III; What could one say to this *husk of a woman*?—Aldington, *Nobody's Baby*, II; anger against Nature, cruel, inexorable Nature, kneeling on the chest of that *wisp of a body*.—Galsworthy, *In Chancery*, III. xiii. Cp. also: There is not a *shadow of evidence*.—Freeman, *The History of the Norman Conquest*, I. Appendix; with *suggestion of contempt*.—Priestley, *Laburnum Grove*, I.

- (10) There we were in a *hell of* a country.
—Galsworthy, *Maid in Waiting*, X.
(吾々の居た其國がなつてない、ひどい國だつたのです)
- (11) The long breakers plunged and ran in a *hiss of* foam along the coast.—Lawrence, *Sons and Lovers*, II. vii.
(長い碎浪が、其岸に怪しき音を立てる泡となつて打寄せて居た)
- (12) Old Roarer Bosbury, a great big *lion of* a man.
—Masefield, *The Taking of the Gry*, p. 15 (Heinemann).
(強力巨軀獅子の如き老ロアラ・ボズベリー)
- (13) A fine *mess of* a marriage it would be.
—Lawrence, *Sons and Lovers*, I. vi.
(とても始末におへない結婚になりますぞ)
- (14) Her head hung on my bosom, with the *night of* her hair shed over me.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XXXV.
(彼女の頭は私の胸の上になだれ、その烏羽玉の黒髪は私の身をかくさんばかりに振りかかつた)
- (15) Moving all her *pearls of* teeth.—*ibid.*, XLIII.
(眞珠の如き歯を動かして)
- (16) I had a *rogue of* a fellow⁽¹⁾ in front of me.
—*ibid.*, XXIII.
(私の前方には竊に觸る奴が居た)
- (17) That winding *serpent of* the channel became luminous in my mind.
—Masefield, *The Taking of the Gry*, p. 103 (Heinemann).
(其くねり曲つた蛇の如き水路が私の心眼にぼつと見えて來た)
- (18) He could not prevent them from chugging round his

(1) Cp. A most pleasant *fellow of* a clergyman.—Combe, *Devil upon Two Sticks*, VI. 我が國語の『田中のやつ』等と比較。Cp. also: Our poor *shrew of* a parson is, by some mad soul, accused of slaying him.—Stevenson, *The Black Arrow*, I. i; Any *slut of* a girl can do it.—Shaw, *Saint Joan*, I.

shores in that *tub of* a paddle-boat the *Daffodil*.

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, I. ii.

(彼は、人があのダフォディルといふ鹽の様な外輪船で、自分の島の岸をけたたましい音を立てて廻はるのを禁ずることは出来なかつた)

の如き、全く枚擧に違が無い。⁽¹⁾ 尙、これ等も、曩に (p. 394) 一言した抽象的表現法なるものと密接なる關係を有する語法である。⁽²⁾

(b) 次に注意して置きたいのは、修辭學上 Hendiadys と稱する語法に於いて、『and+名詞』が形容詞的意義を持つことである。例へば、

- (1) O conspiracy,
Shamest thou to show thy dangerous brow by night,
When evils are most free? O, then by day
Where wilt thou find a cavern dark enough
To mask thy monstrous visage? Seek none, conspiracy;
Hide it in smiles and affability.

—Shakespeare, *Julius Caesar*, II. i. 77-82.

(おお、陰謀よ。汝は悪事が最も自由に跳梁する夜中にすら、その恐ろしい面相を見せることを恥ぢるのか。おお、さうとしたら、日中

(1) 尙、序に二三の例を追加して置く。She has gone through an *Iliad of* woes!—Hardy, *The Dynasts*, II. I. vii; And why have you got that *mane of* hair on your forehead?—Katherine Mansfield, *The Wind Blows*; Between two mountainous cheeks was set a little *beak of* a nose.—Priestley, *Adventure*.

(2) Cp. I had a *pound and a half of* tobacco.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, LXIII; He spent a *mint o'* money in a wild project of founding a watering-place.—Hardy, *A Laodicean*, I. v; Between the wharf and the bedroom window is a narrow strip, which is dry at low tide, but is covered at high tide with at least four and a half *feet of* water.—Doyle, *The Man with the Twisted Lip*; There was only the *thickness of* a floor between them.—Bagot, *Passport*, III; It proved to be a cell hollowed in the *thickness of* the wall.—H. R. Haggard, *She*, XXIII; There is quite a pretty *stretch of* lake beyond.—Wells, *Brynild*, VII. iii; She said in a rather faint voice, and behind the *semblance of* a yawn.—De la Mare, *The Count's Courtship*. 尙、Please get me a *glass of* water.—Wilde, *An Ideal Husband*, III. の如きものを、『勸君更盡一杯酒』の如きものと比較せられたい。

に於いては、何處にその奇怪至極な相貌を隠すに足る程に暗い洞を見附けんとするか。何も探すには及ばん。陰謀よ。それを物柔かな、愛想笑ひに隠すが好い)

- (2) And I will put that business in your bosoms,
Whose execution takes your enemy off,
And grapples you to the heart and love of us.

—Shakespeare, *Macbeth*, III. i. 104-6.

(その上で俺から其事をお前の胸に説き知らしてやらう。それを實行すれば、お前達の敵を亡きものにのみか、お前達を我等の可愛い者とするのぢや)

の如きである。即ち、前の *smiles and affability* はその實 *affable smiles* を意味し、後の *heart and love* は *loving heart* と同意であるのであるが、普通語に於ける *bread and butter*; *cup and saucer*; *rod and line*; *needle and thread*; *watch and chain* 等は、これの原始形態といふことが出来る。

21. p. 160, 例 (8). 次の例を追加して置く。

- (1) They walked the length of an unusually monotonous street.—Priestley, *The Good Companions*, II. iii. 1.

(彼等は並はづれに單調な町をずーつと歩いて行つた)

- (2) The sound of the sea came up, and went the length⁽¹⁾ of the valley.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XVIII.

(海の響が聞えて来て、谷間を向ふまでずーつと傳はつて行つた)

又、*length* の性質は稍異なるが、

- (3) There was a young man lying full length.⁽²⁾

—Maugham, *The Moon and Sixpence*, LIII.

(1) 今一つの例を引く。The man walked abruptly away, striding the length of the crowded deck.—Edith Wharton, *A Glimpse*, I. 尙、これ等に對しては、p. 162 の例 (20) 比較。

(2) 今一つの例を追加する。The parapet was a low one and the ladies were obliged to lie full length.—Evelyn Waugh, *Black Mischief*, VI.

(一人の若い男が身體を一杯に伸ばして寝ころんで居た)

の如きは、極めて普通な用例である。

22. p. 160, 脚註 (1). to bring home; to call home 等を擧げた序に、次の如きをも注意して置きたい。

- (1) Tony of course got up and said he would see her home.
—Aldington, *All Men are Enemies*, II. iv.

(トニーは勿論立ち上つて、彼女を家まで送つて行かうと言つた)

- (2) My cigar will last me home.

—Galsworthy, *Over the River*, IV.

(私のシガーは家へ着くまでもつだらう)

尙、後例は、p. 196 の例 (2); p. 299 の例 (4) 等と比較せられたい。

23. p. 161, 例 (9). 序に、*journey* の意味は稍違ふが、Hazlitt の漫文 *On Going a Journey* をも想起せられたい。尙、それと共に、

- (1) He went his accustomed Sunday walk with Riley.

—Hugh Walpole, *Jeremy and Hamlet*, XI. ii.

(彼はライレイと一緒にいつもの日曜の散歩に行つた)

- (2) As creatures of lower order, only good enough to run errand for us.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, IX.

(一段と劣つた生物で、吾々の爲に使ひに走るのに役立つだけのものとして)

の如きもの、⁽¹⁾ 並に

(1) to go a walk は特に多い様である。今、數箇の例を追加すれば、He had left word that he was going a long walk.—Miss Mulock, *John Halifax, Gentleman*, XV; I can go a walk if I like, can't I?—Lawrence, *Sons and Lovers*, II. vii; Sometimes the ponies need a rest. So go a walk.—Laurence Housman, *Palace Scenes, Stable Government*. Cp. I resolved to go the voyage.—Defoe, *Robinson Crusoe*, I; Will you come a ride in Richmond Park?—Galsworthy, *In Chancery*, I. vii. Cp. also: He's only gone for a little walk.—Galsworthy, *To Let*, II. ii; He went for a ride in the Row.—Galsworthy, *Over the River*, X. それから、to go (run) errand も普通であるが、此句は非常に古くから用ひられたもので、古代英語にも、*Dæs ilcan geares for Aldred biscop to Colne ofer sæ pæs kynges ærende* (=The same year Bishop Aldred went to Cologne over sea the king's errand).—*Anglo-Saxon Chronicle* (D), A. D. 1054. の如きがある。尙、次頁の脚註 (2) 参照。

- (3) He nearly killed Smirke with terror by putting him on his mare, and taking him a *ride* over a common.

—Thackeray, *Pendennis*, III.

(彼はスマークを自分の持(靴)馬に乗せて、共同原つ場へつれて行つて、恐ろしさのあまり死ぬ程の思ひをさせた)

- (4) He took me a *walk*⁽¹⁾ one Sunday.

—Galsworthy, *Maid in Waiting*, XXVII.

(彼は或日曜日に私を散歩に連れて行つた)

の類が記憶さるべく、尙、これ等が前置詞を添へても用ひらるる⁽²⁾ことを思へば、その副詞性は明かであらう。

24. p. 161, 例 (12), (13). 斯の如き way の用法で、私の知る最も古い類例は 1200 年頃の Lincolnshire 方言で書かれて居る *Ormulum* の 8216 行の *Whatt gate summ he gannggepp (= whatever gate he goeth)* である。此 gate は、Scandinavia 由来の語で way を意味する⁽³⁾ (p. 192 脚註参照) が、古くはかかる場合多くは屬格が用ひられたものである (p. 192 並に本補遺 § 43 参照)。

25. p. 162, 例 (2). 必ずしも、此處に入れるべしとは断じ難いが、day in, day out の如き常用句中の day 等も、此 (b) 類に屬すと言ひ得るので、in は副詞で coming in を、out は going out の意を

(1) 今一例を追加する。Here is that old nice lady who comes every day to take Phoebe a *walk*.—Mrs. Gaskell, *Cranford*, XI. Cp. also: The man-mountain shall be obliged to carry, in his pocket, the messenger and horse a six days' journey.—Swift, *Gulliver's Travels, Lilliput*, III; Take him (=the dog) his *run*.—Galsworthy, *Flowering Wilderness*, XXXV; I shall never forget the *drive* he took me.—Galsworthy, *The Man of Property*, II. vii.

(2) Cp. Will you go on an *errand* for me?—Hardy, *The Mayor of Casterbridge*, XXII; Take Alice for a little *promenade*.—De la Mare, *Seaton's Aunt*; He offered to take her for a *journey*.—Maugham, *The Moon and Sixpence*, XXXI; I brought the dog for a *walk*.—Galsworthy, *Flowering Wilderness*, XX. 尙、前頁脚註の後段参照。

(3) Cf. "Clipsby," he shouted, off to the Moat House, and send all other laggards the same *gate*.—Stevenson, *The Black Arrow, Prologue*.

持つものである。⁽¹⁾ 今、一二の例を示せば、次の如きがある。

- (1) *Week* in, *week* out, from morn till night,
You can hear his bellows blow.

—Longfellow, *The Village Blacksmith*.

(来る週も来る週も、朝から晩まで、彼の鑪の音が聞える)

- (2) I must say I should have thought you might realise by now what it means to a woman to struggle with a house and a family, *year* in, *year* out.

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, I. i.

(年から年中、家の事子供等の事で騒擾することが、女の身にとつてどんな事かつて、もうとつくにお分りなつてもよささうなものだと、私だつて思つたらうぢやありませんか)

26. p. 162, 例 (20). 序に次の如きに注意。

- (1) I can never walk its *streets*⁽²⁾ without feeling myself on the verge of adventure.

—Maugham, *The Moon and Sixpence*, XIII.

(私は其の都會の街路を歩きさへすれば、いつも決つて、今に何か異常な事が我が身に起るといふ様な感をするのです)

- (2) After an hour or two of uneasy dozing they would tramp the *streets* again.—*ibid.*, XLVII.

(一時間か二時間不安なまどろみをした後、彼等は再び街路をとぼとぼと歩き廻るのでした)

(1) かく言へば、現代英語の形式から、day 等は主格で對格でないと考えられるが、英語では元來與格であつたもので、與格・對格の區別が失はれた後は、その格に關する感じに動搖を生じ、主格用法が出来たに過ぎない。そしてそれには又別の語感が加はつて居るのであるが、それ等に就いては、§ 238 で詳説するであらう。

(2) 汚らしい意味の street-walker といふ言葉は十六世紀頃からあつたが、これも同じ用法からの發展である。Cp. While your smutty sisters walk the *streets*.—Pope, *The Dunciad*, I. 230. Cp. also: Or perhaps I'm walking in the *street*.—De la Mare, *The Three Friends*. それから、昔海賊の間に用ひられた次の如きものも、同じ用法に立つものと見て良い。Cf. Dreadful stories they were; about hanging, and walking the *plank*.—Stevenson, *The Treasure Island*, I.

27. p. 162, 脚註. no end といふ常用の句を、聊か輕視したかの憾みがあるから、今二つの例を追加して置く。

(1) It's *no end* good of you, Dinny.

—Galsworthy, *Maid in Waiting*, III.

(あなたはどこまでも無限に親切ですね、ディニー)

(2) I've been thinking *no end* about you since we met at Valliant Chevrell.—Wells, *Brynhild*, X. i.

(私はヴァリアント・チェヴレルでお目にかかつてから、どれ程あなたの事を考へて居たか分かりません)

28. p. 167, 例 (32). to stay the night は頗る使用頻度の高い慣用句であるが、⁽¹⁾ 今一つの類句を引いて置く。⁽²⁾

(1) He was, in fact, pleased to see him and proposed to him to stay the *evening* and have a game of card.

—Baring-Gould, *The Broom-Squire*, XVI.

(あの人は實際彼に會つたことを喜んで、其夜はゆつくりして、カルタ遊びをして行けと言ひ出したのです)

それから序に、to stay tea; to stay dinner の如きものも注意して置かなくてはならない。此場合の stay は、前の stay とは稍違つた様に感ぜられないでもないが、實は區別することの困難なものである。今、若干の例を引くと、

(2) He scarcely needed an invitation to stay *supper*.

—Austen, *Pride and Prejudice*, LV.

(1) 尙一二の例を追加すれば、Miss Dinny 'll stay the *night*.—Galsworthy, *Flowering Wilderness*, II; It was a French inn—the only one in a small village where I had to stay the *night*.—Laurence Housman, *Palace Scenes, Royal Table Manners*. 等がある。Cp. It was a whole day holiday, and we were to *sleep* the *night*.—De la Mare, *Seaton's Aunt*. Cp. also: The village where we were to stay *for* the *night*.—M. S. Christopher, *Life's Little Laughs*, II. i.

(2) 尙、*The Broom-Squire* には、同じ章の終りの方に You shall stay the *night*. もある。

(彼は夜食までゆつくりなさいと勧めるまでもない位であつた)

(3) Then manage so as you may stay *tea*, Priscilla.

—Eliot, *Silas Marner*, XVII.

(それなら、プリシラ、お茶までゆつくりする様になさい)

の如く、これ亦極めて普通な用法である。⁽⁴⁾ 尙、これ等との關聯に於いて注意すべきは、これも屢用に屬する

(4) I don't want to keep Mrs. Levison waiting *tea*.

—Mrs. Henry Wood, *East Lynne*, I.

(私はレヴィソン夫人をお茶に待たせたくはありません)

(5) I never wait *supper* for anybody.

—Dickens, *The Pickwick Papers*, IX.

(私は誰の爲にも決して夜食を待つことをしません)

(6) Tell them not to wait *dinner*.

—Edith Wharton, *Ethan Frome*, VIII.

(晝食を待たん様と言つてやつてくれ)

の如きであるが、これ等は、動詞の目的といふべきか、或は副詞相當語と見るべきか必ずしも斷じ易からざる用法で、如何に動詞の目的なるものが、副詞と接壤一連の關係にあるものなるかを示す好適例であるとい

(1) 此言ひ方は Shakespeare の頃から用ひられて居る。Cf. 'Tis like enough, for I stay *dinner* there. / And *supper* too.—Shakespeare, *Richard III*, III. ii. 122-3. 尙、stay のかかる使ひ方は昔はその範圍が廣かつた。Cf. My father stays my coming.—*The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, II. ii. 13; I 'll stay no longer question.—*The Merchant of Venice*, IV. i. 346; I have no patience to stay her coming.—Wycherley, *Love in a Wood*, IV. v; I cannot stay fooling any longer; I tell you his sister stays *supper* for us.—Wycherley, *The Country Wife*, III. ii. Cp. At the dessert I was very agreeably surprised by the entrance of Sir Richard Jebb, who stayed *coffee*.—Miss Burney's *Diary*, 27 July, 1786. Cp. again: 'Come, Doctor,' said Lady Frances, 'stay for *coffee*.'—Theodore Hook, *The Parson's Daughter*, II. ix. (q. N.E.D.). Cp. also: You 'll stop to luncheon.—Wilde, *An Ideal Husband*, IV; Won't you stay to *dinner*?—Galsworthy, *Flowering Wilderness*, IX; You are going to stay to *tea*, aren't you?—Maugham, *Our Betters*, I.

ふべきである。⁽¹⁾

29. p. 170, 例 (6). 此處に擧げた例の常用に属することは言ふまでもないが、吾々は次の如き類例の存在にも注意すべきである。⁽²⁾

(1) The rain fell steadily all *night* long.

—Virginia Woolf, *The Years*, p. 66 (Hogarth Press).

(雨は夜通し降り続いた)

(2) I used to lie awake half the *night* long.

—Dé la Mare, *The Bird of Travel*.

(私は夜半分は眼を醒して寝て居るのが常であつた)

(3) All the *morning* long she thought of Paul.

—Lawrence, *Sons and Lovers*, I. v.

(彼女は午前中ずつとボールの事を考へ續けた)

尙、この序に、three days ago の如き言ひ方に就いて一言注意する。現代語としては ago は副詞と見るを以て最も妥當とすべく、days は、此處に示した day と同様、次に来る ago にかかる副詞相當語と感ぜられるが、これを歴史に溯つて見ると、元來 ago は古代英語の *agangan* (=to go forth) の過去分詞で、古くは *agone* と綴られ、⁽³⁾ 元は、その前なる時を表はす名詞 (即ち、此處では days) を形容したものであり、其名詞は屢 p. 162, (b) に属する役目を成したものである。

(1) 此點を適切に理解する爲には、現代英語に於いては、stay の方は他動詞として用ひらる時は、大體 check, stop, hinder の意 (cf. No door *stayed* them. —Kipling, *Kim*, IX.) であるのに、wait の方は、今日尙、『待つ』意に用ひられて居ることに注意すべきである。Cf. He will *wait* the hour. —Scott, *Rokeby*, I. xxix; She had told Billali to *wait* her return. —H. R. Haggard, *She*, XXVII; Go now, and *wait* me in the house. —Lawrence, *David*, XVI. 尙、若し、上の如き食事の場合の wait を他動詞として用ひられたものと解するならば作爲的 (使役的) に keep waiting を意味する特殊の場合とすべきである。

(2) 因に、此言ひ方は十三世紀初頭から現はれる様である。

(3) Cf. It is scarce a twelvemonth yet, although it seems ten years *agone*. —Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XXI; They landed somewhere on the Devonshire coast, ten or eleven years *agone*. —*ibid.*, LIII. Cp. She, who but two minutes *gone* had gazed upon us. —H. R. Haggard, *She*, XXVI. 序に、[n] の脱落もかなり古くからあつた。Cf. I speke of manye hundred yerres *ago*. —Chaucer, *The Canterbury Tales*, D 863.

30. p. 171, 例 (12). 序に whit の否定でない例をも引いて置く。

It looked so firm, and every *whit* living.

—Lawrence, *Sons and Lovers*, II. viii.

(それ〔身體〕は全く強く、すみずみまでもびちびちして居る様であつた)

即ち、every whit は p. 170 の例 (3) の every inch と等しい用法に立つものである。

31. p. 174, 例 (26). worth a cent の序に、今少し此 worth といふ語に関する用法を注意して見る。と言ふのは、これもその後『英語青年』で問題になつたからである。斯の如き場合 worth は形容詞であり、その次に来る名詞又は名詞相當語は副詞相當語と解するのが、最も適切な見方である⁽¹⁾が、今、若干の少しづつ違つた例を擧げると、

(1) To reign is worth *ambition*, though in Hell.

—Milton, *Paradise Lost*, I. 262.

(支配することは、たとへ地獄に於いてであつても、念願するに値する)

(2) They are not worth your *notice*.

—Dickens, *The Pickwick Papers*, III.

(あなたの注意する値打はありません)

(3) I knew all along that the prize I had set my heart on, was not worth the *having*.

—Thackeray, *Vanity Fair*, XXXI.

(私が心にかけてた獲物は、その實、手に入れる値打のないものだと、初めから知つて居た事です)

の如き、何れも普通な用法であり、皆上記の解釋に依つて氷然たらざる

(1) 文法家のうちには、これを形容詞 worth の目的と見る人もあることは注意に値する。

は無い。それから、worth one's while といふ例が p. 48 と p. 260 の脚註に出たが、此場合も while は元來『…するに必要な時間』を意味し (p. 163 の脚註参照)、やはり上に出た諸語と同様の解釋を下すべきものである。又、

- (4) It would be abundantly worth *while* to learn the language in order to read it.

—Gissing, *Henry Ryecroft*, *Summer*, IX.

(それ〔文學作品〕を読む爲に、其國語を學ぶことは、充分その勞に報いてあまりある事であるだらう)

の如きも、只人を指定しないだけで、同様の原意を有するが、

- (5) But it is worth *while* my wiring to Vienna, is it not?

—Wilde, *An Ideal Husband*, II.

(然し私からヴィーンへ電報を打つ〔て照會する〕だけの事はあるのぢやありませんか)

の如きになると、餘程其原意が稀薄になり、遂には

- (6) She spoke simply because she thought Shirin more worth *while* than Venn.⁽¹⁾

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, IV. i.

(彼女は、只ヴェンよりシリーンの方が大切だと考へたから、口出しをしたのです)

の如く、while が全然冗語化した用法まで生じたのが今日の英語の實情である。尙、序に (un-)worthy といふ形容詞に就いて一言する。此語が通常 of+名詞 (又は名詞相當語) を伴ふのが一般であることは、誰しも知るところであるが、又、

- (7) Sweet Ellen, dear my life must be,

(1) 尙、この次に括弧に入れて、Yet Venn was wholly *un-worth while*. といふ文がある。Hogarth Press 本 p. 261 参照。

Since it is worthy *care* from thee.

—Scott, *The Lady of the Lake*, IV. 401-2.

(可愛いエレン姫、私の命も大切なものに違ひありません。おん身から心にかけていただくに足るものであるからには)

- (8) It does not appear to me that my hand is unworthy your *acceptance*.⁽¹⁾—Austen, *Pride and Prejudice*, XIX.

(私の裸なもので、夫として受けていただく値打の無いものでもない様に、私には思はれます)

の如きも、必ずしも稀なる例でないことを記憶すべきである。

32. p. 178, (3), (4). blood-red; snow-white の如きは、英語に於いて最も古くから行はれた、言はば原始的な言ひ方であつたらしく、通常 *Anglo-Saxon Herbarium* と稱せらるる藥草學の文獻の中に、*Dæt pridde cyn ys sanguineus, ðæt is blodread* (=the third kind is sanguineus, that is blood-red) が見えるし、又、*Ælfric's Lives of the Saints* に *snawhwitne hlaf* (=snow-white bread) がある。⁽²⁾ Cf. Icelandic *snjo-hvitr*; Dan. *snehvid*; Sw. *snöhvít*.

33. p. 179, (f). 副詞對格の中、手段・方法等を表はすものとしては、既説のもの他に、次の如き常用周知のものも加へて置く方が良かったと思ふ。

- (1) What *class* are you going? I go *second*.⁽³⁾

—Galsworthy, *The Man of Property*, III. i.

(1) Cp. And think thee worthy of an empress' love.—Shakespeare, *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, V. iv. 141; She knew not how to believe that Mr. Darcy could be so unworthy of Mr. Bingley's regard.—Austen, *Pride and Prejudice*, XVII.

(2) 文が長いから引くことをしないが、有志の人は Early English Text Society 刊行本第一卷の p. 48, l. 405 を見られたい。因に *snawhwitne* の -ne は對格語尾。hlaf は今日の loaf.

(3) second, third は、言ふまでもなく、その次に class のあるべきで、それがあれば其 class が副詞對格なのであるが、かく省略せられた場合には、便宜 second, third をそれと見るを妨げない。

(君は何等で行く。僕は二等で行く)

(2) You won't let me travel *third*.

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, III. iii.

(あなたは、私に三等旅行をおさせにはならないでせう)

(3) I came *steerage*.—Galsworthy, *In Chancery*, II. xiii.

(私は三等で来ました)

34. p. 180, 例 (9). 『全速力で』といふことを只 full speed とだけで済ますことは、最も普通な事であるが、⁽¹⁾ かかる speed の用法は随分古く、1250 年頃の *Genesis and Exodus* の中に次の例が出る。

Dis ebris waxen michil *sped*.—l. 2548.

(=These Hebrews increase great speed).

35. p. 181, 脚註 (4). Bind him hand and foot といふ言葉に關し、古代英語に於いては、hand と foot とが目的となつて居ると書いたが、同じ *Matthew*, xxii. 13 を、今日 Oxford の Bodleian Library にある、有名な *Rushworth MS.* に就いて見ると、その行間書き込みに限り、⁽²⁾ *gebindað him foet and honda*. となつて居て、既載の Tyndale 譯に似て、全く近代式になつて居ることを附記して置く。⁽³⁾

(1) 序に今一つの例を追加して置く。We went full *speed* ahead till we knew ...that we were at sea.—Masefield, *The Taking of the Gry*, p. 172 (Heinemann).

(2) 私が『行間書き込み』といふのは、所謂 Glosses のことで、此場合には拉丁語の原典に對し、その行間に英語の譯 (大方は逐語譯) を書き入れたものである。而して、此馬太傳の英語は、十世紀後半頃、Yorkshire 西部の Harewood の僧侶であつた Farman が書き入れたもので、言語は北部 Mercia 方言である。

(3) 『似て居る』といふのは、全く同じとは言へないからである。と言ふのは、Tyndale 譯に於いては、hande と fete とは對格と思はれるが、此寫本の foet と honda は明らかに與格であるからである。尙、he の對格は、古くは hine であつたが、元來の與格なる him がこれに代つたのは、中部方言では十世紀後半頃からであるから、此處では、foet, honda の關係上對格と考へられる。最後に、序を以て、此句を含み、動詞の違つた例を、最近世の文學の中から引いて置く。I'm tied *hand and foot*.—Edith Wharton, *Ethan Frome*, IX.

36. p. 182, 例 (13), (14). 此形式のものは他にも多くあつて、殆んど枚擧に遑無しと言つても良い位であるが、此處に普通なるもの數節を追加して置く。⁽¹⁾

(1) I believe in his heart he is rather pleased that I should have turned her *neck and crop*⁽²⁾ off the premises.

—Baring-Gould, *The Broom-Squire*, L.

(私が彼女を敷地内からおつぱり出してやつたことを、彼は心中心ろ喜んで居ることと信じます)

(2) She has nursed him *hand-and-foot*⁽³⁾ these two months back.—Doyle, *The Naval Treaty*.

(あの娘は過去二月間、かゆいところへ手の届く位、彼の看護をしたのです)

(3) I will aid him *heart and hand*.

—Ainsworth, *The Tower of London*, I. ix.

(私は精神的に、又實力的に彼を助けませう)

(1) 例 (14) の body and soul の如きは、頗る古くより存在するので、1200 年頃に書かれた *Vices and Virtues* と名附けられる書物の中の *Of heule baste-spache* (=of evil backbiting) の條下に、...forði ðe scal god almihti forliesen, baðe lichame and saule (=therefore thee shall God Almighty destroy, both body and soul) といふのが見える。これは今日の body and soul の先驅を成すものと認められる (古代英詩 *Genesis*, 930-1 に *pe is gedal witod / lices and sawle* (=thee is separation destined of body and soul) があるが、これは形容詞句と思はれる)。降つて十四世紀になると、今日のままの姿で現はれるので、例へば、*tho renkes that ben here / Bodye and soule ben myne* (=those men that are here body and soul are mine).—Langland, *Piers the Plowman*, B. XVIII. 275-6 (cf. C. XXI. 302-3) の如くである。

(2) Cp. If ever I get in again, without being cast in *by neck and by crop*, I will give our newborn donkey leave to set up for my schoolmaster.—Black nore, *Lorna Doone*, IX.

(3) 此 hand and foot (hyphen は有無いづれでも良い) は、例 (12) のとは異り、to nurse, to serve, to wait upon 等と共に用ひられる。

(4) I'm for you *heart and soul*.⁽¹⁾—Wells, *Brynhild*, XI. i.

(私は全精神を擧げてあんたの味方だ)

37. p. 183, 例 (21). *hand in hand* なる慣用句の最も古い例として *N.E.D.* が擧げて居るのは、1500 年頃の *Three Kings' Sons* の中に出るものであるが、此句は、實際はそれよりも五百年も古く、1000 年よりも前に書かれたと信ぜられる *Apollonius of Tyre* の中に、

Arcestrates se cyning heold Apollonius *hand on handa*.

(=Arcestrates the king held Apollonius *hand in hand*)

といふのが出る。⁽²⁾

38. p. 184, 例 (27), (28). *cap in hand*; *candle in hand* の如き言ひ方は何時の頃からあつたか、断言は出来難いが、1250 年頃の *Genesis and Exodus* の 3149 行に *Oc sod and girt, stondende, and staf on hond* (=But shod and girded, standing, and staff in hand) といふのがあることを記録して置く。

39. p. 190, 例 (21). 前例に擧げた *what with* は、殆んど知ら

(1) 例 (3), (4) に引いた *heart and hand*; *heart and soul* は何時頃から存在するか、それは固より私共の言ひ得るところでない (*N.E.D.* は前者の最初の例を 1884 年に引き、後者の例を 1798 年に見出して居る) が、後者に似たもの (場合は大に異なるが) に *life and soul* といふのがあつて、それは十三世紀初頃の *Early South-English Legendary* の中なる、*St. Teofle* の事蹟を叙した詩の 91 行に *panne were ich fur-lore liif and soule!* (=Then should I be lost life and soul). といふのが見える (*E.E.T.*, p. 290)。因に、此書中、*St. Johan Baptist* に関する傳説の 88 行 (p. 32) には、彼の指一本はどうしても焼けなかつたといふことを述べた後に、*Ake elles was al to douste i-barnd bodi and bones ech-one* (=But otherwise was all to dust burnt, body and bones each one). といふ文が出る。此 *body and bones* なる句は、他に用例があるかどうかを知らないが、恐らく頭頭を好む心持も興るところあつて出来たものであらうと思ふ。とにかく、それは後世の、そして今でも用ひられる *bones and all*, 例へば、*My servants were astonished to see me eat it, bones and all, as in our country we do the leg of a lark.*—Swift, *Gulliver's Travels, Lilliput*, VI. と極めて近いことは確かである。尙、此 *bones and all* に對しては、pp. 182-3 の例 (16), (17), (18) 比較。

(2) 入手し易いものとしては、Cook の *First Book in Old English*, p. 178 を見られたい。尙、断つて置くが、今日 *in* なる場合、古代英語 (特に、此作品の題する *Wessex* 語) に於いては、多く *on* を用ひたのである。これが正に現代の *hand in hand* と同一であることを、ゆめ疑うてはならない。*handa* は *hand* の與格。

ない人の無い位普通な句であるが、*what between* は稍珍しく思はれるであらうから、今一つの實例を追加しよう。

When I had gone but a very few yards, *what between*⁽¹⁾ the pressure of the air and the awful sense of the consequences that a slip would entail, I found it necessary to drop on to my hands and knees and crawl.

—H. R. Haggard, *She*, XXIV.

(私は、未だほんの二三ヤード進んだばかりの時に、一つには風の強さの爲に、又一つには一寸足をすべらしたが最後、恐ろしい結果になるといふ意識の爲に、已むを得ず四つ這ひになつた)

40. p. 190, 脚註 (1). *some, any* が動詞を修飾する、方言乃至俗語の場合を指摘した序に、今少し此事を強く注意する爲、用例を追加して置く。

(1) You see I have my clothes ready, and it would disappoint me *some*⁽²⁾ not to get a chance to show 'em off.

—Leonard Merrick, *The Prince in the Fairy Tale*.

(御覽の通り私は服装をきちんと整へて居ります。ですから、それを人に見せびらかす機会を得ないとすれば、ひどく失望しますよ)

(2) You don't want bein' made more drunk *any*.

—Kipling, *Badalia*.

(もつと酔はされたくなんかありやしないのだ)

次に、*none* も、特に *to sleep* なる動詞と共に、

(3) I slept *none* that night.—Defoe, *Robinson Crusoe*, VIII.

(1) Cf. John was greatly surprised, and pleased, at the value I now set upon him; until, *what betwixt* the desire to vaunt, and the longing to talk things over, I gradually laid bare to him nearly all that had befallen me.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, IX.

(2) *some* は、實際問題としては、既説の如く、*somewhat* を意味することと、*very much* を意味することとがある。上のは *very much* であるが、次のは *a little* に近い。Well, I guess I'll go in and work *some*.—O'Neill, *The First Man*, I.

(私は其夜一寸も眠らなかつた)

の如く用ひられて not at all (not a wink) を意味することを注意して置く。

41. p. 191, 例 (26). one and all なる面白い句は 1375 年頃の Lancashire 方言と思はれる *Cursor Mundi* の一書の 2907 行に *oon and alle* として現はれるのが最も古い様である。

42. p. 191, 例 (1). 今日の副詞 needs が、古代英語の *nied* (中部方言 *nēd*) の屬格から來たものであることは、所説の通りである。然し、古代英語を學ぶ人々の間に、或は疑ひの生ぜんことを虞れて、少しく斷つて置く。*nied* は女性名詞で、その屬格 (單數) は通常 *niede* であつたのであるが、又、別に此格に限り男性名詞に倣つて *niedes* (*nēades, nēdes*) が用ひられたので、その最も古い例として N.E.D. が掲げて居るのは *Laws of King Alfred* の中に出る *Se þe hine þonne niedes ofsloge (=who then of necessity killed him)* である。尙、普通の屬格 *niede* も同じく副詞として用ひられたといふ事實も此處に注意して置く方が、本當に文法を研究する人には有益であらう。一例を引くと次の如きがある。

Niede⁽¹⁾ sceal bion gebrocen ðæt mod ðara hieremonna, gif se lareow and se hierde agiemeleasað ðæt he hiera utan ne helpe.—*Ælfred's translation of Gregory's Cura Pastoralis* (ed. Sweet, p. 136).

(=The spirit of the subjects must necessarily be broken, if the teacher and shepherd neglect that he help them not from without).

(1) 長母音符は、今日の研究者の立場からは附ける習はしになつて居るが、實際の文書には、これを用ひないのが普通である。私が上に *niede* とし、此處に *niede* とするのは、その爲と理解していただきたい。

43. p. 192. 私は此處に、*Anglo-Saxon Chronicle* の中から *oðres wæges* なる句を引き、それが by another way を意味することを説いた。舊著に於いても、これを説き、且同時に古代英語の聖書、*Matthew*, ii. 12 に *on oðerne weg* といふ例があつて、それが前の *oðres wæges* と同意であること、丁度今日でも He returned another way. とも言ふし、He returned by another way. とも言ふのと同じであることを述べて置いたが、今、誤脱したから、此處にこれを補つて置く。⁽¹⁾

44. p. 194, 例 (9). early days なる言ひ方に就いて有益な記事は、In England, the idiom 'early days' is still used, as 'It is early days to tell what will come of this'; in America, however, it is seldom heard, though 'early in the day' is common.—Greenough and Kittredge, *Words and their Ways in English*, p. 196. であるが、英國に於いて此句が尙生きて居ることを示す爲、此處に二つの例を引いて置く。

(1) It's early days beginning this, I call it.⁽²⁾

—Baring-Gould, *The Broom-Squire*, XVI.

(もう此始末だなんて、お早いといふものですよ)

(2) It was early days to have messed up her marriage.

—Galsworthy, *Over the River*, VII.

(彼女の結婚生活をめちやめちやにしまふには早かつた)

因に、early in the day⁽³⁾ の例は、見た記憶は少からずあるが、今これ

(1) Cp. also: Go thy ways upstairs.—Lawrence, *The Widowing of Mrs. Holroyd*, I. ii; Go thy way, Friend of all the World.—Kipling, *Kim*, IV; What do I want of you save to be let go on my way.—Baring-Gould, *The Broom-Squire*, IX.

(2) 此文は、新婚尙日の淺い婦人が不義をはたらいて居ると邪推した小姑が、其婦人に向つて放つたにくまれ口である。

(3) 勿論、私の言つて居るのは、day が特定の日を指して居るのでない場合である。late の場合では次の如きがある。Pray understand that I know nothing at all about it and that I feel it is too late in the day for me to start improving my knowledge.—Evelyn Waugh, *Black Mischief*, III.

を引くことが出来ないのは残念である。

45. p. 194, 脚註 (3). 米國に於ける屬格副詞の一として、days の實例を追加して置く。

He, too, has heard of Homer, and, "If it were not for books," would "not know what to do rainy days."

—Thoreau, *Walden, Visitors*.

(彼はまたホッマーの事をも耳にして居たので、「若し書物が無かつたら、雨の日などどうして良いか分からない」と言つて居た)

46. p. 199, 脚註 (2). 感興與格なるものは、受益與格と一連續のもので、その間の境界は、決して明かにこれを劃し得るものでないといふのが正しい説明である。それ故に、その一部として、此處に擧げた for me の如く分解されたものは、他の人稱の場合に於いてもあり得ることは明かであればならない。最初斯の如きものは詳説する場所でない關係上、for me 以外は示さなかつたが、再考の結果、誤解を避ける爲だけにでも、他の場合をも擧げる方が良くと考へるに至つたから、少しく他の場合をも引いて置く。即ち、感興を呼ぶものには

(1) There's a lass for you—like a pink-and-white posy.

—Eliot, *Silas Marner*, XI.

(いい娘さんでせう—丸で白赤色とりどりの花束の様な)

の如きがあり、「迷惑」を蒙る心持を表はすものには次の如きがある。⁽¹⁾

(2) And I will not spoil your life for you.

—Wilde, *An Ideal Husband*, IV.

(だから私はあなたの一生を損ふことはしません)

(1) 即ち、此 for you は will not spoil に附くものではなく、spoil だけに係り、spoil your life for you が will not で打消されて居るのである。少しく誇張して言へば、『あなたの一生を毫無しにして差上げる様な事はしません』である。Cp. Really, this horrid House of Commons quite ruins our husbands for us.—Wilde, *An Ideal Husband*, II. 尙、p. 198 の例 (6), (7) と比較。

又、三人稱の例で注意すべきは、

(3) She ruined his career for him.

—Virginia Woolf, *The Years*, p. 128 (Hogarth Press).

(彼女は彼の經歷を毫無しにした)

(4) In some way or other he had spoilt her happiness for her.—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, I. ii.

(どうしたことか知らんが、彼は彼女の幸福を損うたのだ〔と感じた])

(5) The ghastly tension of possessions, and struggling for possession, spoils life for everybody.)

—Lawrence, *Touch and Go*, II.

(物を持つて居る時の凄惨な心の緊張と、所有慾の爲の苦悶といふものは、凡ゆる人の生活を損ふものだ)

の如きである。

47. p. 200, 脚註 (1). 目的なるものの副詞性に就いては、本文中にも補遺の中でも、機會のある毎に言つたが、今一つ、次の二様の言ひ方が、實際上何等の區別無く、昔も今も極めて普通に用ひられて居ることも注意に値する。

(1) What do you mean?

—Aldington, *All Men are Enemies*, III. i.

(といふと)

(2) How do you mean?—Galsworthy, *Over the River*, XIII.

(そのわけは)

尙、V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, I. ii には How の使つた例があり、同書 III. ii には What の例が出る。

48. p. 207, 脚註 (1). to take it easy の普通なることは周知に屬することと信するが、又、次の如きものも存在する。

That may mean one of two things. Either she's taking it hard or she's taking it *easily*.—Priestley, *The Roundabout*, I.

(それは兩様に取れる。彼女はそれを六々しく考へて居るのか、又は、のんきに構へて居るのか、どつちかだ)

49. p. 207, 脚註 (3). to play *fair* の普通なることは、今更言ふまでもないが、それに對しては又、次の如き用法の存在が記憶さるべきである。

One should always play *fairly*.

—Wilde, *An Ideal Husband*, I.

(人はいつも公明正大にふるまふべきです)

50. p. 208, 例 (32), (33). 動詞を修飾する *right* としては、今日尙普通な If I remember *right* をも記憶に留めて置きたい。一例を引くと次の如きがある。⁽¹⁾

If I remember *right*, our surgeon was obliged to let above thirty of them blood.—Defoe, *Robinson Crusoe*, XV.

(私の記憶に誤り無しとすれば、吾々の船醫は三十人以上の人達に刺落術を施さなければなりません)

51. p. 209, 脚註 (3). 此處に *clean forgot*(ten) が十四世紀頃から見當ることを言つたのであるが、或は、書き方が明瞭を缺いて、誤解を來さんことを虞れるが故に、一言斷つて置く。*forgot*(ten) を離れて言ふならば、*clean* のかかる用法は、遠く古代英語の時代から存在するので、その一例は、Alfred 大王が 897 年頃にもなされた、Gregory's *Cura Pastoralis* の譯書の序文に、*Swa clæne hio was oðfeallenu*

(1) Cp. It ran, if I remember *right*, 'sent the pips to A, B, and C.'—Doyle, *The Five Orange Pips*; If I remember *rightly*, you on one occasion, in the early days of our friendship, defined my limits in a very precise fashion.—*ibid*; It was lost, if I remember *aright*, at the Hotel Cosmopolitan.—Doyle, *The Blue Carbuncle*.

on Angelkynne (=so clean it was decayed in England) といふのが出る。⁽¹⁾

52. p. 215, 例 (5). *ripping* は脚註に述べた通りの語で、近來は特に *good* に伴はれて用ひられる。今一例を追加すれば、

It would be a *ripping* good joke.

—Joyce, *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man*, II.

(それこそとても面白いなくさみであるであらう)

の如きがある。

53. p. 217, (6). これも本補遺 § 12 の場合と同様に、甚だその所を得ないのであるが、別に項目を立てる程のものでもないので、句たるの故を以て敢て此處に添附する。それは、通俗語乃至方言に於いて、『形容詞+and』が形容詞の前に来り、それが副詞相當の意義を持つことで、特に廣く英米に通じて用ひられるのは、*nice and* (=nicely, satisfactorily) である。例へば、

(1) Pass your cups while it's *nice and hot*.

—Priestley, *The Good Companions*, II. iv. 3.

(お茶の程よく熱いうちに、お茶碗をこちらへ)

(2) I thought you'd like me to look *nice and clean*.

—Maugham, *Our Betters*, I.

(私が身なりをちやんとして居るのを好みだらうと思つてました)

の如く、又、時には、

(3) But, Dad, to have Clare free, with a perfectly clear conscience, would be *nice and ironic*.

—Galsworthy, *Over the River*, XXII.

(1) Early English Text Society から出て居る、Sweet の校訂本第二頁を見られたい。彼の *Anglo-Saxon Reader*, p. 5 にも見えるが、それは別の寫本に依つたもの (E.E.T., p. 6) で、且、長母音符が附けてあるから、此處に引いたのとは少し異つて居る。但、*clæne* に關する限り、兩者同一である。

(然しね、お父さん、クレアを良心に全然恥ぢること無く自由の身にしてやるつて、とても皮肉でせう)

に於けるが如く、殆んど very に等しい。その他、fine and; rare and が何れも強意の副詞の如くに用ひらることは、私が夙に詳説した⁽¹⁾ところであるが、尙、一つづつの例を引いて置かう。

(4) I'm *fine and* pleased for to see you so content.

—Verney, *Stone Edge*, XXV.

(私はあなたがそんなに満足して居るのがとてもうれしい)

(5) The times were *rare and* bad.

—Mrs. Gaskell, *Mary Barton*, VIII.

(時勢が馬鹿に悪かつた)

54. p. 247, 脚注 (1). Jespersen の所謂 Instrumental Object なるものは、我觀に依れば、重要なる問題を構成するものではないが、尙、念の爲、若干の例を引いて見よう。

(1) "Yes, sir," said the chairman, pointing a *finger*⁽²⁾ towards him.—Jerome, *Variety Patter*.

(「いかにも」と議長は其男の方へ指を指しながら言ひました)

(2) Miss Craddock brushed her *hand* over her mouth.

—Virginia Woolf, *The Years*, p. 58 (Hogarth Press).

(クラドックさんは手で口元を撫でた)

(3) He dug his *heels* into the turf.

—Wells, *Brynchild*, VII. vii.

(1) 拙著『英國中部地方言の研究』pp. 452-4, 596-7 参照。尙、これも既に同書に於いて言つた事であるが、Shakespeare, *Othello*, IV. ii. 55 に、Globe 版等に依ると slow unmoving finger が見えるが、それは Quarto 版の誤りを傳へたもので、Folio 諸版に見える *slow and moving* が正しいのでなければならぬ。意味は *slowly moving* である。Cp. the *fatal and* neglected English.—Henry V, II. iv. 13. 勿論これは *fatally neglected* の意である。

(2) 今一つ類例を加へる。Mr. Tate, the English master, pointed his *finger* at him.—Joyce, *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man*, II.

(彼は靴の踵を芝生の中に埋(?)めた)

(4) He sat up, ruffling his *fingers*⁽¹⁾ through his hair.

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, I. iii.

(彼は居ずまひを正して、指で髪の毛をむしやむしやと掻いた)

の如きがそれであり、又、

(5) She nodded her *head* at Shirin.

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, I. ii.

(彼女はシリーンの方を向いてうなづいた)

の如きも、同様に見ることが出来る。

55. p. 256, 脚注. Laugh thy girlish *laughter* は詩に於ける例であつたが、最近、散文に於いても、次の例に氣附いたから記録して置く。

Why can't you laugh? You never laugh *laughter*.

—Lawrence, *Sons and Lovers*, II. viii.

(あなたは何故笑ふことが出来んのです。あなたは、ついぞ本當に笑ふことをしませんね)

56. p. 269. 私は此頁に於いて、同族目的と副詞對格とが、接壤的關係にあることを言つたが、尙、p. 161 の例 (10) と、p. 257 の例 (15) の如きを比較して見たならば、思ひ半ばに過ぎるものがあるであらう。それから、Jespersen は *A Modern English Grammar*, III, p. 236 (12.3_i) に於いて、古代英語の *Blickling Homilies* の中から、eal his *lif* he lifde buton sinnum (=all his life he lived without sins) といふ文を引いて、we see as it were a cross between the cognate object and the substantival subjunct of time (length) と言つて居るが、これは確に注意すべき例であり、又、誠に當を得た説明といふべきである。次の

(1) Cp. Michael ruffled his hair.—Galsworthy, *Maid in Waiting*, XXXIV.

- (1) All his
- life*
- he lived blameless.

—*The National Review* (Sept., 1940), p. 316.

(一生涯彼は過無き生活を営んだ)

に於いても、事情が全く上の場合と同一であることは言ふまでもないが、若し假りに、聊かくどい感を與へるが可能な様に、これを All his life he lived a blameless life. としたならば、問題の life は、そのままで忽ち副詞對格となるのである。又、

- (2) When people have lived in the colonies all their
- lives*
- .

—Hugh Walpole, *Jeremy and Hamlet*, X. iii.

(人が生れてからずつと植民地で暮した場合には)

- (3) I've lived in England all my
- life*
- .

—Wells, *Brynhild*. VII. ii.

(私はこれまでずつと英國に住んで居ました)

の如き場合には、in the colonies; in England が中間に介在する關係上、lives, life は副詞對格として受け入れられることは勿論であるが、必ずしもさうでなくてはならないとも斷じかねる。次の如き存在を、此際特に注意すべきである。

- (4) All his
- life*
- was lived in the sight and sound of Mattie Silver.—Edith Wharton,
- Ethan Frome*
- , I.

(彼の生活は凡て、マティエ・シルヴァーの姿の見え、その聲の聞える中に営まれた)

以て同族目的と、副詞對格との密接にして不可分なる關係を知るに足るであらう。

57. p. 269, 脚注. 前頁から續く此部分では、同族目的たり得るものが、comma で隔てられて居ることに注目せられたい。尙又、次の如く、同じものが dash を以て隔てられる場合もあることは、更に注意すべきである。

- (1) She smiled at me—a strange, wicked
- smile*
- .
- ⁽¹⁾

—Jerome, *The Woman of the Sæter*.

(彼女は私の方へ微笑を送つた——一種異様な、氣味の悪い微笑を)

- (2) But he still laughed on—a hyena
- laugh*
- .

—H. R. Haggard, *Ayesha*, X.

(だが彼は尙も笑ひ續けた——殘酷な笑ひを)

58. p. 285, 脚注 (1). to lead someone a dance の如き言ひ方は、此處に古い例を擧げただけであるが、それは同時に掲げた to lead someone a dog's life の如きと共に、今日も尙極めて普通である。今、一例を引けば、

I suppose she got bored with her own game, and, having led us enough of a dance, decided one day that she wouldn't lead us a dance any longer.

—V. Sackville-West, *The Dark Island*, II. i.

(察しますところ、彼女は自分の打つ芝居にうんざりし出して来て、吾々を充分弄弄した揚句、或時、もうこれ以上人を引つぱり廻はすのはやめようと決心したのでありませう)

の如きがある。我が國語の『踊らせる』とは違ふが、稍似た比喩的用法であることは言ふまでもない。尙、序に言ふが、此言ひ方は、p. 408 に掲げた to take someone a walk の類と接觸關係にある用法で、to lead someone a dog's life の方は、寧ろかの方に近いとも言はれ得る。乃ち、吾々は此處にも、目的なるものの副詞的性格を觀取することが出来るのである。

59. p. 344, 脚注 (2). What if; How if は兩方共極めて用例が多い。其事を知る一端として、更に一箇づつの例を、等しく同一作家の文の中から引いて置く。

(1) Cp. also: She smiled, her smile was really very sweet.—Maugham, *The Moon and Sixpence*, V.

(1) *What* if his steering lights gave out?

—Masefield, *The Taking of the Gry*, p. 165 (Heinemann).

(彼の操舵燈が消えたらどうだ)

(2) *How* if the lights aren't there, in a fog?—*ibid.*, p. 9.

(燈火が無かつたらどうだ、霧の中で)

それから、主補語の副詞性を知る爲の、一参考資料として次の如きを觀察せられるならば、蓋し思ひ半ばに過ぎるものがある。thanks は一見補語の如く、然もそれは副詞對格なのである。

(1) But after all it was *thanks* to Mrs. Brown that she had found her son.—Edith Wharton, *Her Son*, V.

(だが何と言つても彼女が子息を見附けたのはブラウン夫人で御蔭であつた)

(2) Then there was this new indication that the darkest hour was over. And it was *thanks* to her.

—Francis Stuart, *The Bridge*, XVII.

(それに最悪の時は過ぎてしまつたといふ此新しい兆しがあつた。そしてそれも彼女の御蔭であつたのだ)

60. p. 348, 例 (25), (26). 此處に方言に於ける、副詞主補語の例を二箇挙げたが、今一つこれも方言に於いて極めて普通な等例を引いて置かう。

So you are going stag-hunting? That's *purely*.⁽¹⁾

—Baring-Gould, *The Broom-Squire*, XXIII.

(であんたは鹿狩りに行くのね、すてきだわ)

61. p. 351, 脚註 (2). 本文中に引いた to beat black and blue は、十三世紀末頃からある模様であるが、to beat; to pinch 以外の動

(1) 尙、此語は、例 (25) の rarely と同様に、よく heathly の意に用ひられる。Cf. Be that you? Well, I never! you do look *purely*.—Hughes, *Tom Brown's School-Days*, II.

詞を有する近世の例を今二つ擧げて置く。

(1) I would gladly have thrashed him *black and blue*, supposing I were able.—Blackmore, *Lorna Doone*, XII.

(私は喜んで彼を打つて打つて黒ずみをでかさしたでせう、さうすることが出来るとしたら)

(2) Always wore one of those high chokers even when he rode to the hounds, and flogged me *black and blue* for telling a lie.—Aldington, *All Men are Enemies*, I. vi.

(狐狩に行く時だつて、[彼は] いつもあの咽喉をしめる窮屈な高いカラを着けて居て、嘘を言つたと言つては私を笞で打ちすゑて黒ずみをでかさした)

[昭和十六年四月二十三日亡き母の日稿了]

720

索 引

1. 重要事項索引..... 1-10
2. 重要語句索引..... 11-77
3. 補遺索引 77-84

重要事項索引

凡例

1. 数字は特に印を附せざる限り頁を示す。
2. 略語は普通文法上の慣用に依り明かなるものの外次の通りである。

Accus.=Accusative.	Ind. Obj.=Indirect Object.
Adv. Accus.=Adverbial Accusative.	Inf.=(Bare-, Root-) Infinitive.
Cl.=Clause.	Instr.=Instrumental.
Cogn. Obj.=Cognate Object.	<i>Ital.</i> =Italian.
Compl.=Complement.	<i>L.</i> =Latin.
<i>Dan.</i> =Danish.	<i>M. E.</i> =Middle English.
Dat.=Dative.	Nom.=Nominative.
Dat. Inf.=Dative Infinitive.	Obj.=Object.
Dat. Int.=Dative of Interest.	Obj. Compl.=Objective Complement.
Dir. Obj.=Direct Object.	<i>O. E.</i> =Old English.
<i>d. v.</i> =Dative Verb.	<i>O. F.</i> =Old French.
Equiv.=Equivalent.	Phr.=Phrase.
Eth. Dat.=Ethical Dative.	Pred.=Predicate.
f.=and the following page.	Refl. Obj.=Reflexive Object.
ff.=and the two following pages.	Ret. Obj.=Retained Object.
fn.=foot-note.	<i>Rus.</i> =Russian.
<i>Fr.</i> =Erench.	Sent.=Sentence.
<i>Fris.</i> =Frisian.	<i>Sp.</i> =Spanish.
<i>f. v.</i> =Factitive Verb.	Subj.=Subject.
Gen.=Genitive.	Subj. Compl.=Subjective Complement.
Ger.=Gerund.	<i>Sw.</i> =Swedish.
<i>Germ.</i> =German.	

3. ~印は見出しの語を代表する。
4. 凡て英語索引を本體とする。邦語に依るものは補助的のものと見られたい。

A

Ablative Case 174fn.
 Absolute Clause 240.
 Absolute Elements 60ff.
 Accidence 12.
 Accusative Case 11, 36.
 Noun or Pronoun in ~: (1) as Cogn. Obj. 39f., 249-72; as Dir. Obj. 36-9, 41-5, (47-50), 242-8; as Ret. Obj. 46, 302. (2) as Obj. Compl. 47-50, 350-65, 368. (3) as Adv. Equiv. 159-91.
 Noun in ~: as Adj. Equiv. 128-34.
 Accusative of Description 129fn.
 (for+)Accusative+Dat. Inf. 96ff., 368f.
 Accusativus Qualitatis 129fn.
 Active Voice 40, 140.
 Adjective 2. (1) as Adv. Equiv. 200-15; as Noun Equiv. 71-85. (2) as Obj. Compl. 47-50, 350-65; as Subj. Compl. 33-6, 310-37.
 ~ and Adverb 200f. See also 212fn., 342-3fn.
 Adjective Clause 22, 158f.
 Adjective Equivalentents 104-59.
 Adjective Phrase 18, 134ff., 136-44.
 Adjuncts 54-7.
 Adverb 2. (1) as Adj. Equiv. 156ff.; as Noun Equiv. 87-96. (2) as

Obj. Compl. 374-9; as Subj. Compl. 340-50.
 ~ and Adjective 200f. See also 212fn., 342-3fn.
 Adverb Clause 22, 241. as Noun Equiv. 95f.
 Adverb Equivalentents 159-241.
 Adverb Phrase 18f., 217-23, 224-39, 239f.
 Adverbial Accusative 159-91.
 ~ and Cogn. Obj. 268f.
 Adverbial Objective 159-91.
 Alliteration 181.
 Anglo-Saxon 14.
 Appositive Nouns 111ff.
 as-Phrase for Objective Complement 366.
 as-Phrase for Subjective Complement 339.

B

米語 14.
 文 3. See also under 'Sentence.'
 文の種類 23-6.
 文成立の形式 28-52. See also under 'Forms of Sentences.'
 文の要素 52-62. See also under 'Elements of Sentence.'
 文語 12.
 文句 21.
 獨立文句 27. 副詞文句 22, 241; 名

詞相當として 95f. 從屬文句 23. 形容詞文句 22, 158f. 名詞文句 21, 103f. 主要文句 23. 對等文句 27. 遊離文句 240.
 文の附屬 56f.
 文法 12.
 分詞: 副詞相當語として 215ff.; 形容詞相當語として 146-56; 名詞相當語として 85f.
 分詞句 239f.
 文章論 12fn.

C

重(複)文 23ff.
 直接目的 36-9, 41-5, (47-50), 242-8.
 中古英語 14.
 中相 52fn., 70fn., 140 & fn., 328-31.
 Clause 21.
 Absolute ~ 240. Adjective ~ 22, 158f. Adverb ~ 22, 241; as Noun Equiv. 95f. Co-ordinate ~ 27.
 Dependent ~ 23. Independent ~ 27. Noun ~ 21, 103f. Principal ~ 23. Subordinate ~ 23.
 Cognate Object 39f., 249-72.
 ~ and Adv. Accus. 268f.
 Complement 33, 46, 309-79.
 Objective ~ 47-50, 350-79.
 Subjective ~ 34ff., 309-50.
 ~ and Adverb 212fn., 342-3fn.
 Complement-Adjuncts 55f.
 Complex Sentence 23ff.
 Compound Noun 106.

Compound Sentence 26f
 Compound Subject 59.
 Conjunction 4.
 Co-ordinate ~ 9.
 Subordinate ~ 9.
 Conjunction Phrase 20.
 Connectives 4.
 Co-ordinate Clause 27.
 Copula(tive Verb) 6.

D

代名詞 5.
 奪格 174fn.
 Dative Case 17fn 41.
 Noun or Pronoun in ~: (1) as Ind. Obj. 41ff., 272-301; as Ret. Obj. 45f., 301. (2) as Adv. Equiv. 196-9.
 Pronoun in ~: as Dat. Int. 196f.; as Eth. Dat. 197ff.; as Refl. Obj. 199, 302-8.
 Dative Infinitive 17fn., 96fn. as Adj. Equiv. 136-44; as Adv. Equiv. 224-39; as Noun Equiv. 63-6; as Noun Equiv. with '(for+)' Accus.' 96ff., 368f.; with Interrogatives 98.
 Dative Verb 31, 41-5, 272-301.
 Demonstrative Pronoun 59.
 Dependent Clause 23.
 Dependent Elements 54-60.
 Dialects 13.
 Direct Object 36-9, 41-5, (47-50), 242-8.

同格名詞 111ff.
 獨立文句 27.
 動名詞: 形容詞相當語として 144ff. (148f. 參看); 名詞相當語として 66-71.
 現在分詞との區別 146-9.
 動詞 2. See also under 'Verb.'
 動詞の分類 30f.
 動詞句 19.
 Double-barrelled Object 248.
 同族目的 39f., 249-72.
 ~ と副詞相當の對格名詞 268f.

E

Eight Parts of Speech 7.
 Elements of Sentence 52-62.
 Absolute ~ 60ff. Dependent ~ 54-60. Essential ~ 53. Principal ~ 53. Subordinate ~ 54-60.
 Ellipsis 3fn., 30fn.
 婉曲語 217.
 Equivalents 63-241.
 Adjective ~ 104-59. Adverb ~ 159-241. Noun ~ 63-104.
 Essential Elements 53.
 Ethical Dative 197ff.
 Euphemism 217.

F

Factitive Verb 31, 46-50, 350-78 (esp. 352-65).
 Finite Verb 30.
 for + Accusative + Dative Infinitive 96ff., 368f.

Forms of Sentences 28-52.
 Form I. 31ff. Form II. 33-6.
 Form III. 36-9. Form IV. 41ff.
 Form V. 46-50.
 Formal Object 113fn.
 Formal Subject 113fn.
 for-Phrase for Objective Complement 366f.
 for-Phrase for Subjective Complement 339.
 不動態法 93.
 不完全陳述自動詞 30, 33-6, 310-31 (esp. 316-31), 340-9.
 副詞 2. (1) 形容詞相當語として 156ff.; 名詞相當語として 87-96.
 (2) 目的補語として 374-9; 主補語として 340-50.
 ~ と形容詞 200f. 尙, 212fn., 342-3fn. 參看。
 副詞文句 22, 241. 名詞相當として 95fn.
 副詞句 18f., 217-23, 224-39, 239f.
 副詞相當語句 159-241.
 不屈折品詞 10.
 不定詞 17fn. 目的補語として 369ff. 尙, 「與格不定詞」參看。
 附與動詞 31, 41-5, 272-301.

G

言語 1. See also under 'Language.'
 Genitive Case 10fn.
 Noun in ~: as Adv. Equiv. 191-6.
 Noun or Pronoun in ~: as Adj.

Equiv. 113-28.
 Group Genitive 127f.
 Objective Genitive 115 & fn., 120.
 Subjective Genitive 115 & fn.
 限定動詞 30.
 現在分詞: 副詞相當語として 215f.;
 形容詞相當語として 146-9; 名詞相
 當語として 85f.
 動名詞との區別 146-9.
 Gerund: as Adj. Equiv. 144f.; See
 also 148f.; as Noun Equiv. 66-71.
 ~ and Present Participle 146-9.
 Gerundive Infinitive 96fn.
 Gesture 1, 13fn.
 擬關係代名詞 9f.
 疑問代名詞 60.
 疑問副詞 60.
 疑問詞+與格不定詞 98.
 語 1.
 五格 186fn., 188fn.
 語格論 12.
 語の配置 11f.
 合(成)文 26f.
 合成名詞 106.
 合成主語 59.
 Grammar 12.
 Group Genitive 127f.

H

配語法 11f.
 反照・自動・受動の法則 328fn., 335fn.
 反照目的 199, 302-8.
 入品詞 7.
 發始態 364fn.

並列語法 59fn.
 被保留目的 45, 301f.
 方言 13.
 補語 33, 46, 309-79.
 目的補語 47-50, 350-79.
 主補語 34f., 309-50.
 ~と副詞 212fn., 342-3fn.
 補語の附屬 55f.
 方式語法 93.
 表示語 2.
 標準語 13.
 Hypotaxis 59fn.

I

Inchoative Aspect 364fn.
 Independent Clause 27.
 Indicative Mood 83fn.
 Indirect Object 41f., 272-301. See
 also 196-9.
 Infinitive 17fn. as Obj. Compl. 369fn.
 See also under 'Dative Infinitive.'
 Inflection 10.
 Inflectional Parts of Speech 10.
 Instrumental Case 186fn., 188fn.
 Instrumental Object 247fn.
 Intensives 203.
 Interjection 7.
 Interjection Phrase 20f.
 Interrogative Adverb 60.
 Interrogatives + Dative Infinitive 98.
 Interrogative Pronoun 60.
 Intransitive Verbs of Complete Predi-
 cation 30, 31.
 Intransitive Verbs of Incomplete

Predication 30, 33-6, 310-31 (esp.
 316-31), 340-9.
 引用語句又は特示の語句・文句又は文
 98-103.
 'It' as Cognate Object 270ff.

J

叙實法 83fn.
 助格 186fn., 188fn.
 叙想法 83fn.
 受益與格 196f.
 重(複)文 23f.
 述部 3.
 述部形容詞 34, 46.
 述部名詞 34, 46.
 述部の附屬 54f.
 述語 3, 29.
 述語の附屬 54f.
 從要素 54-60.
 從(屬)文(句) 23.
 從屬接續詞 9.

K

過去分詞: 副詞相當語として 216; 形
 容詞相當語として 150-6; 名詞相當
 語として 85f.
 過向動詞 36.
 關係代名詞 5.
 關係副詞 5.
 關係語 4.
 關係語句 58f.
 關係形容詞 5.
 感興與格 197f.
 觀念語 2.

間接目的 41f., 272-301. 尙、196-9 參
 看。
 間接目的の副詞句化 44f.
 間投詞 7.
 間投詞句 20f.
 間投詞(又は間投詞句) 60f.
 完全陳述自動詞 30, 31.
 活性語法 93.
 形式目的 113fn.
 形式主語 113fn.
 形容詞 2. (1) 副詞相當語として 200-
 15; 名詞相當語として 71-85.
 (2) 目的補語として 47-50, 350-
 65; 主補語として 33-6, 310-37.
 ~と副詞 200f. 尙、212fn., 342-3fn.
 參看。
 形容詞文句 22, 158f.
 形容詞句 18, 134f., 136-44.
 形容詞相當語句 104-59.
 Kinds of Sentences 23-6.
 近世英語 14.
 古代英語 14.
 口語 12.
 混(成)文 27f.
 句 17. See also under 'Phrase.'
 屈折 10.
 屈折品詞 10.
 句讀法 13.
 強勢語 203.

L

Language 1.
 American ~ 14.
 Standard ~ 13.

M

名詞 2. See also under 'Noun.'
 名詞に前接されたる名詞 104-10.
 名詞文句 21, 103f.
 名詞句 17f., 63-6.
 名詞相當語句 63-104.
 身振 1, 13fn.
 Middle English 14.
 Middle Voice 52fn., 70fn., 140 & fn., 328-31.
 Mixed Sentence 27f.
 Modern English 14.
 Modifier-Modifiers 57f.
 Modifiers 4. See also 54-8.
 目的 36, 242.
 直接目的 36-9, 41-5, (47-50), 242-8.
 同族目的 39f., 249-72.
 反照目的 199, 302-8.
 被保留目的 45f., 301f.
 間接目的 41ff., 272-301. See also 196-9.
 形式目的 113fn.
 層疊目的 248.
 目的補語 47-50, 350-79.
 目的の附屬 55.
 目的格 11fn.

N

人稱 29.
 Nominative Case 11, 29.
 Nonce Noun 10, 103, 297.
 Nonce Verb 10, 103, 297.
 Non-inflectional Parts of Speech 10.

能相 40, 140.
 Notional Words 2.
 Noun 2.
 Compound ~ 106.
 ~ in Accusative Case: as Adj. Equiv. 128-34; as Adv. Equiv. 159-91.
 ~s in Apposition 111ff.
 ~ in Dative Case: as Adv. Equiv. (Ind. Obj.) 41ff., 272-301. See also 196-9.
 ~ in Genitive Case: as Adj. Equiv. 113-28; as Adv. Equiv. 191-6.
 Noun Clause 21, 103f.
 Noun Equivalents 63-104.
 Noun Phrase 17f., 63-6.
 Number 30.

O

Object 36, 242.
 Cognate ~ 39f., 249-72.
 Direct ~ 36-9, 41-5, (47-50), 242-8.
 Double-barrelled ~ 248.
 Formal ~ 113fn.
 Indirect ~ 41ff., 272-301. See also 196-9.
 Reflexive ~ 199, 302-8.
 Retained ~ 45f., 301f.
 Object-Adjuncts 55.
 Objective Case 11fn.
 Objective Complement 47-50, 350-79.
 Objective Genitive 115 & fn., 120.
 Old English 14.
 音韻論 13fn.

Order of Words 11.

P

Parataxis 59fn.
 Participle: as Adj. Equiv. 146-56;
 as Adv. Equiv. 215ff.; as Noun Equiv. 85ff.
 Participial Phrase 239f.
 Partitive 'of' 79fn., 211 exam. (47).
 Parts of Speech 7.
 Inflectional ~ 10.
 Non-inflectional ~ 10.
 Passive Constructions 40f., 45f., 50f., 331-7, 372.
 Passive Voice 40, 140.
 Past Participle: as Adj. Equiv. 150-6; as Adv. Equiv. 216; as Noun Equiv. 85ff.
 Person 30.
 Phonology 13fn.
 Phrase 17.
 Adjective ~ 18, 134ff., 137-44.
 Adverb ~ 18f., 217-23, 224-39, 239f.
 Conjunction ~ 20.
 Interjection ~ 20f.
 Noun ~ 17f., 63-6.
 Participial ~ 239f.
 Preposition ~ 19f.
 Verb ~ 19.
 Possessive Case 10fn.
 Predicate 3.
 ~ Adjective 34, 46.
 ~-Adjuncts 54f.

~ Noun 34, 46.
 ~ Word 3fn.
 Preposition 4.
 ~ Phrase 19f.
 Presentive Words 2.
 Present Participle: as Adj. Equiv. 146-9; as Adv. Equiv. 215f.; as Noun Equiv. 85ff.
 ~ and Gerund 146-9.
 Principal Clause 23.
 Principal Elements 53.
 Pronoun 5.
 ~ in Dative Case: as Adv. Equiv. 196-9. See also 302-8.
 Pseudo-Relative ~ 9f.
 Relative ~ 5.
 Punctuation 13.

Q

Qualifying Infinitive 96fn.

R

Reflexive Object 199, 302-8.
 Relative Adjective 5.
 Relative Adverb 5.
 Relative Pronoun 5.
 Relative Words 4.
 連結 4.
 連結動詞 6.
 Retained Object 45f., 301f.
 臨時動詞 10.
 臨時名詞 10.
 流動語法 93.

S

作爲動詞 31, 46-50, 350-78 (esp. 352-65).
 三格 17fn.
 Sentence 3.
 Complex ~ 23-5.
 Compound ~ 26f.
 Elements of ~ 52-62.
 Forms of ~s 28-52.
 Kinds of ~s 23-6.
 Mixed ~ 27f.
 Simple ~ 25f.
 Sentence-Adjuncts 56f.
 接續詞 4.
 接續詞句 20.
 接續詞(又は接續詞句) 58f.
 四格 11fn.
 所相 40, 140.
 所相構文 40f., 45f., 50f., 331-7, 372.
 所有格 10fn.
 主部 3.
 主語 3, 29.
 合成主語 59.
 形成主語 113fn.
 主語の附屬 54.
 主補語 34ff., 309-50.
 主格 11, 29.
 修飾語 4.
 修飾語句 54-8.
 修飾語句の修飾語句 57f.
 主體屬格 115fn.
 主(要)文(句) 23.
 主要素 53.

Simple Sentence 25f.
 Simple Transitive Verb 31, 36.
 相 137.
 層疊語法 59fn.
 層疊目的 248.
 相當語句 63-241.
 副詞相當語句 159-241. 形容詞相當語句 104-59. 名詞相當語句 63-104.
 Standard Language 13.
 Stress 108, 149, 202fn., 372fn.
 數 30.
 Subject 3, 29.
 Compound ~ 59.
 Formal ~ 113fn.
 Subject-Adjuncts 54.
 Subject Word 3fn.
 Subjective Complement 34ff., 309-50.
 Subjective Genitive 115fn.
 Subjunctive Mood 83fn.
 Subordinate Clause 23.
 Subordinate Conjunction 9.
 Subordinate Elements 54-60.
 Syntax 12.

T

對格 11, 36.
 對格の名詞又は代名詞: (1) 直接目的として 36-9, 41-5, (47-50), 242-8; 同族目的として 39f., 249-72; 被保留目的として 46, 302. (2) 目的補語として 47-50, 350-65, 368. (3) 副詞相當語として 159-91.
 對格の名詞: 形容詞相當語として 128-34.

(for+)對格の名詞又は代名詞+與格不定詞 96ff., 368f.
 對象屬格 115fn., 120.
 對等文句 27.
 對等接續詞 9.
 單(-)文 25f.
 單純他動詞 31, 36.
 the+Adjective: as Noun Equivalent 71-9, 81ff. See also 85ff.
 the+Comparative+of 77.
 the+Superlative+of 77, 130, 320.
 to be-Phrase for Objective Complement 366.
 to be-Phrase for Subjective Complement 337f., 338fn.
 頭韻 181.
 統辭論 12.
 特殊文句 368.
 特殊の挿入文句 61f.

U

-ung Verbal Noun (O. E.) 66fn.

V

Verb 2.
 Copula(tive ~) 6.
 Dative ~ 31, 41, 272-301.
 Factitive ~ 31, 46-50, 350-78 (esp. 352-65).
 Finite ~ 30.
 Intransitive ~ of Complete Predication 30, 31.
 Intransitive ~ Incomplete Predication 30, 33-6, 310-31 (esp. 316-

31), 340-9.
 Nonce ~ 10, 103, 297!
 ~ of Motion omitted 30fn., 294 exam.(130).
 Verb-Adjuncts 54f.
 Verb Phrase 19.
 Voice 137. Active ~ 40, 140. Middle ~ 52fn., 70fn., 140 & fn., 328-31. Passive ~ 40, 140.

W

Word 1.
 Notional ~s 2.
 Presentive ~s 2.
 Relative ~s 4.
 Word-Order 11.

Y

呼びかけの語句 61.
 與格 17fn., 41.
 與格の名詞又は代名詞: (1) 被保留目的として 45f., 301; 間接目的として 41ff., 272-301. (2) 副詞相當語として 196-9.
 與格の代名詞: 反照目的として 199, 302-8; 受益與格 196f.; 感興與格 197ff.
 與格不定詞 17fn., 96fn. 副詞相當語として 224-39; 形容詞相當語として 136-44; 名詞相當語として 63-6; (for+)對格の名詞又は代名詞と共に名詞相當として 96ff., 363f.; 疑問詞と共に名詞相當として 98.
 遊離文句 240.

遊離要素 60ff.

Z

前置詞 4.

前置詞句 19f.

前置詞(又は前置詞句) 58.

前置詞に導かれたる句: 副詞相當とし

て 217-23; 形容詞相當として 134ff.

屬格 10fn.

屬格の名詞: 副詞相當語として 191

-6.

屬格の名詞又は代名詞: 形容詞相當語として 113-28.

重要語句索引

凡例

1. 大體 abc 順に依るは勿論であるが、同一語に導かるる句の類は凡て其冒頭語の下に排列する。例へば、a bottle—a year の如きは、a を冠する句の群類中に配せられ、従つて、それ等は able, about 等より前位を占め、all youth が alles weis より先に出るが如くである。
2. 規則動詞が先に立つ句の場合に於いては、その基本形の導くものを先に掲げ、派生形の先立つものはこれを後にする。例へば、acted both parts は act the fool より後に廻すが如くである。他の品詞の場合に於いてもこれに準ずる。又、不規則動詞に導かるるもの場合には、凡てその實現の字母順に配置する。例へば、drank approval が drink to the health より遙に前が出るが如くである。
3. 單一なる動詞(又は動詞句)を指示する場合には、凡てその基本形を以てする。例へば、附與動詞としての bear は、本書に於いては bore me company; bore her no malice の如き形で現はれるのであるが、本表にはそれ等の例の所在が bear の項下に示されて居るが如くである。但、斯の如き場合、特に注意する價值ありと認むるものに就いては、その現はるるままの姿に於いてもこれを指示する。
4. 反照目的を有する動詞は、その目的が普通の人稱代名詞なる場合には凡て本書の實例に従つて absent thee; followed me, I の如くに表はし、-self, -selves 形のものも同様の方法を探るが、betook himself; betaken herself 等の如く種々の形で現はるるものは、これを betake oneself の如き一形に依つて指示する。
5. 一箇類の語句に對し二箇以上の指示を與へる場合には、其語句が當然出べき理由を有し、従つてそれに必要なる説明又は解釋の得らるる頁を示すに肉太數字を用ふる。乃ち、然る場合、普通字體のものは只當該語句が偶然現はるる頁を示すに過ぎない。肉太文字に依る指示が二箇以上與へてある場合、並に二箇以上の指示數字が全部普通字體なる場合には、その何れの頁をも検索せられたい。

A

- A better where 88.
 a bit, Wait 162.
 a bottle, Eight shillings 298 fn. See also 177.
 A button: If you care ~; The only chap I care ~ 176 fn.
 a cent, Worth 174.
 a consultation, Thirty francs 177.
 a crown, Cost him but 174.
 a curse, Care not 175 fn.
 a damn, Don't care 175.
 A Daniel come to judgement 154.
 A dear 84.
 A degree more tolerable 172.
 A different way 180.
 a distance from it, We lived 160.
 a fig, None would have cared 174.
 A finger's breadth 122.
 a fourpenny piece, Don't value 175.
 a good deal, Stunned me 169 fn.
 A good fifteen hundred a year 288.
 A greater 83.
 A hair's breadth 115, 122.
 A hand's breadth 122.
 A head shorter 171.
 a hoot, Wouldn't care 176.
 a horse-radish, Doesn't matter 175.
 A House of Commons man 105.
 A how-d'ye-do 101.
 A hundred times 152.
 a life-time, Wait 166.
 a lifetime, Last you 196. See also 299 & fn.
 A little ways 193 fn.
 a little while, For 254.
 A long sight worse 172.
 a lot, Matters 169 fn.
 a man, Four pieces of eight 177.
 a mile, I walked near 160.
 A minute longer 171.
 A minute or two 165.
 A moment 165, 193.
 a moment to lose, We have not 133.
 A moment's notice 115.
 A month 166.
 A nation of men's 128.
 A pensive hour to spend 303.
 a pound, Five pence 132. See also 177.
 a rotten nut, Doesn't value 175.
 A sailor short 173.
 A shade: ~ too nervous 173; ~ whiter 172.
 A silly 84.
 A size smaller 172.
 A step or two 165 fn.
 A stone's throw 124.
 a straw, Doesn't care 175.
 A stupid 84.
 A thought too often 173.
 A time 67 fn., 165.
 A trifle under medium height 173.
 A week: A thousand dollars ~ 46; Five shillings ~ 177.
 A week's work 121.
 A wherefore 88.
 A while: For ~ 163 fn., 251; Quite ~ 163.
 a whin-blossom, Cares 123, 175.
 a whit better, Not 171.
 A wink: Hardly slept ~ 269 fn.; Slept not ~ 269 & fn.; Never ~ could he sleep 269 fn.
 A wiser 84.
 A year: A good fifteen hundred ~ 288; Forty pounds ~ 177, 215; £ 350 ~ 296.
 A year or two's Latin 127.
 a yes, Nodded 266 fn.
 á Cesar, Bruto mató (Sp.) 200 fn.
 á la madre, Aman (Sp.) 200 fn.

- á mi hijo, Me han muerto (Sp.) 199 fn.
 A' nights 220 fn.
 á Roma, He visto (Sp.) 200 fn.
 Aberdeen granite 323 fn.
 Able: ~ to distinguish 339 fn.; ~ to get 90; ~ to sit 121.
 about fifty yards in diameter, A chasm 132.
 about town, Fellows 134.
 about-town, Man- 134 fn.
 Above: as Subj. Compl. 157.
 above, God 158.
 Above statement 156.
 Absent himself 304.
 Absent thee 303.
 accord, Of his own 218.
 Account (f. v.) 358, 359
 account, This I my glory 359.
 Account for 19.
 accounted his most bitter enemy, Whom he 358.
 Accustomed to looking 71.
 Acknowledge (f. v.) 361.
 Acknowledge: ~ as; ~ for; ~ to be 366.
 Acknowledged me her heir 361.
 Acknowledged their aims impracticable 361.
 Ácsian (O. E.) 274 fn.
 Act the fool 259 fn.
 Acted both parts 259.
 Administer (d. v.) 274. See also 345 fn.
 admitted a student, Was 331.
 adored, The 86.
 Advance (d. v.) 274.
 Advance guard 306 fn.
 Advanced age 117.
 Advancing furiously 343 fn.
 Advise you all to look 208.
 afar (off), From 94 & fn.
 Afford (d. v.) 180, 274.
 Afforded me this advantage 274.
 Afire 347 fn.
 Aflame: as Obj. Compl. 376; as Subj. Compl. 347; Etymology of 347 fn.
 Afraid: ~ to come 160; ~ to have me go 371; ~ to point 191.
 after, Two years 225.
 After all 57.
 After life 206 fn.
 after the General Election, Till 93.
 after they had begun the meal, Until 95.
 After time 157.
 afternoon, Of an 218, 219 fn.
 Afternoon tea 108.
 afternoon's train, This 291.
 afterwards, Till 90.
 afterwards, Two months 51.
 Age: A boy of his own ~ 132 fn.; A boy your ~ 132; Coming of ~ 136; I was your ~ 129; Who might be any ~ 130.
 Ah's and O's, With 100.
 Ajar: as Subj. Compl. 348; as Obj. Compl. 377 & fn.; Etymology of 347 fn.
 Albion's isle 115.
 Alive: as Obj. Compl. 377; as Subj. Compl. 319 fn., 333, 347 & fn., 363; Etymology of 347 fn.
 all a-flame, Was 347.
 All alive 347.
 all attention, My wife had been 133.
 All bloodless lay the untrodden snow 311.
 All but 54, 58.
 All day long 170.
 all diligence, He is 133.
 all ears, I am 317.
 all expectation, He was 133.
 all-fours, On 51.

- all I could, I hurried 187
 All impatience, I was 133.
 All night 162, 167, 346 fn.
 All of them 79 fn., 213 fn.
 all rings and brooches and lilac silk
 and black satin, A woman 134.
 All Saints' Day 116.
 all sunshine, Find her room 133.
 all tearful sympathy, Jane was 317.
 All that glisters is not gold 54.
 All the better 188.
 All the more interesting 52.
 All the time 163 fn., 183, 206 fn.
 All the way 161.
 All the ways 193 fn.
 All the whiles 195.
 All this while 163.
 All too quickly 189.
 All work and no play 103.
 all youth and life and colour, She
 was looking 134.
 Alles weis (*M. E.*) 192 fn.
 Allot (*d. v.*) 274.
 allotted them, The time Hannah had
 274.
 Allow (*d. v.*) 274.
 allowed, Certain show of freedom
 was 301.
 allowed, We are 302.
 Allowed her imagination full play
 274.
 Alone: as Obj. Compl. 98, 377; Ety-
 mology of 377 fn.
 Alone: Leave the engines ~ 377; To
 let them ~ 93.
 Always 192 fn.
 Always 192.
 amiably, Make you more 342 fn., 375.
 Amiss 347 fn.
 An arrow's flight 93.
 An hour to spare 142 fn.
 An hour's walking 121.
 an inch into futurity, Who can see
 160.
 An inch of ground to stand upon
 144.
 An innocent 84.
 an instant, In 181.
 an instant to be lost, There is not
 138.
 An instant's delay 133.
 An old man's sleep 112.
 Ancients 152.
 And all: One ~ 191, 239; Scabbard
 ~; Shoe ~ 182; Wig ~ 183.
 And to spare: Credit, ~ 142; Enough
 ~ 141; Room ~ 141 f.
 Andswarast ðam bisceope (*O., E.*)
 246 fn.
 Anes æfenes (*O. E.*) 194 fn.
 angel's, An (=angelic) 123.
 angerly, Look 341.
 Animal 79 fn.
 Ankle-deep 176.
 Anoint (*f. v.*) 354.
 Anointed thee king 354.
 another-guess manner, In 192 fn.
 another instant, For 168 fn.
 Another moment's respite 121.
 Another opportunity 169 fn.
 Another step 161.
 Another way 161.
 Another's keeping 89.
 Answer (*d. v.*) 43, 275.
 Answer: Case after 246 fn.
 Answer me directly 245.
 Answer me that 275.
 Answer their question 247 fn.
 Answer to that 247 fn.
 Answerist to the bischop (*M. E.*)
 246 fn.
 anxiety to buy, I had no 110.
 Anxious: ~ to mention 229; ~ to
 regain 234; ~ to spare 293 fn.

- any, I didn't like it 190 fn.
 Any better 187 fn.
 Any darker 188.
 any good, She would never be 131.
 Any 'I 'm afraids' 99.
 Any length of time 166.
 Any longer 187 fn.
 Any more 187 fn.
 Any the older 187.
 Any the worse 187 fn.
 Any way 180.
 Anybody's business 236.
 anything, Cared 186.
 anything to do. Set him 293.
 Anyways 193 & fn.
 anywhere, At almost 89.
 apart, Sixty yards 170.
 Appear+Subj. Compl. 318.
 Appear to be 338 fn.
 Appeared to be a sober fellow
 338 fn.
 Appeared to be feeble 338 fn.
 Appears offence 318.
 Appears sensible and silent 318.
 Apple-pie 107.
 Apple-tree 107.
 Appoint (*d. v.*) 275.
 Appoint (*f. v.*) 351, 354.
 Appointed him captain 354.
 Appointed me master 351.
 Appointing me a small closet 275.
 Apprise (*d. v.*) 43.
 Approve (*f. v.*) 335 fn., 362.
 Approved himself your true friend
 335 fn.
 Approves it true 362.
 April showers 190.
 Apropos of 58.
 Apt: ~ to be 228; ~ to ride 179.
 Archbishop's grace of York, The
 127 fn.
 Are busily 341 fn.
 are no more, The brave that 22.
 arm's length, At 122.
 arrow's flight, An 93.
 As like(ly) as not 211 fn.
 As plain as plain can be 101.
 As poor as poor can be 101.
 Ascian (*O. E.*) 274 fn.
 Ashamed to tell 284 fn.
 Ask (*d. v.*) 42, 43, 45, 60, 275, 295, 301.
 Ask(ed): ~ me to read 230; ~ me to
 recommend 290; ~ you to write
 300 fn.
 Asking: ~, It is no use 113 fn.; ~,
 Thinking of 277 fn.
 Asking: ~ a badger to live 97; ~
 you to buy 277 fn.
 Asking himself the cause 275.
 Asleep: as Obj. Compl. 377; as Subj.
 Compl. 163, 348; Etymology of
 347 fn.
 Assign (*d. v.*) 275.
 At a loss to know 236.
 At a word 53.
 At all events 56.
 At arm's length 122.
 At (the) best 82, 83, 99, 361 fn.
 At evening 110, 217.
 At full speed 180 fn.
 At (the) furthest 82.
 At heart's ease 83.
 At her wittes ende (*M. E.*) 125 fn.
 At large 82, 83.
 At last 82, 126, 294, 333, 353, 357.
 At latest 83.
 At least 82, 156, 190, etc.
 At liberty to do 99.
 At morning 217.
 At one's fingers' ends 115, 124.
 At one's wit's end 125 & fn.
 At one's wits' end 125 fn.
 ate short and crisp, The cakes 330.
 Ate their meat raw 351.

Atte beste (*M. E.*) 82 fn.
 Atte laste (*M. E.*) 82 fn.
 Atte leste (*M. E.*) 82 fn.
 august or divine, The 73.
 Aunt Winifred 306 fn.
 Aunts Ann and Juley and Hester 284.
 austere, The 80 fn.
 Autumn: Last ~ 226; This ~ 339 fn.
 avail, What can words 186.
 Avail nothing 187 fn.
 Awake: as Obj. Compl. 364; Etymology of 364 fn.
 Awaken+Subj. Compl. 312.
 awakened Edward Hyde, I had 312.
 Award (*d. v.*) 275.
 awarded every one a severe punishment 275.
 Away: as Obj. Compl. 377; Etymology of 377 fn.
 Away: Wanted the locks ~; Wish him miles ~ 377.
 awful, Talks 202.
 Awful particular 202.
 Axian (*O. E.*) 274 fn.

B

bad, Is wanted bitter 202.
 bad, Go to the 74.
 bad to worse, From 81.
 Bade her to take courage 373.
 Bade his friend farewell 277.
 Bade the conductor to put 373.
 Bade them get 370.
 Badly: as Obj. Compl. 376 & fn.; as Subj. Compl. 350 fn.
 badly, Wants it 202 fn.
 Badly off 346.
 Bag and baggage 181 fn.
 bag and baggage, With 181 fn.
 Bailiff of Islington's daughter 127.

Bailiff's daughter of Islington 127.
 band to play, There should be no 219.
 Banish (*d. v.*) 275.
 Banish'd brother 66 fn.
 Banished thee my realm 275.
 Banished hym out of his realme 275 fn.
 Bankruptcy or divorce court 84.
 Barely: as Obj. Compl. 375.
 battle, Fought a long 256.
 Be: signifying existence 6, 7, 33, 185, etc.; +Subj. Compl. 7, 33, 34, 35, etc., 310, 315, 317, 319, 322, 327, 333, etc.; with Adv. as Compl. 340, 341, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349 & fn., 350 fn.
 Be (=are) 83.
 Be admitted+Subj. Compl. 331.
 Be bidden enter 372 fn.
 Be born+Subj. Compl. 309 fn., 332, 343 fn.
 Be born and bred+Subj. Compl. 314 fn.
 Be bred+Subj. Compl. 314, 332.
 Be bred: ~ as; ~ for 339; ~ to be 339 fn.
 Be brought+Subj. Compl. 50, 311, 332.
 Be called+Subj. Compl. 211 fn., 311, 332.
 Be caught+Subj. Compl. 332.
 Be considered+Subj. Compl. 311, 332.
 Be considered as 339 fn.
 Be counted+Subj. Compl. 333.
 Be created+Subj. Compl. 333.
 Be crowned+Subj. Compl. 333.
 Be cut+Subj. Compl. 333.
 Be declared+Subj. Compl. 333.
 Be deemed+Subj. Compl. 332 fn.
 Be elected+Subj. Compl. 333.
 Be entered+Subj. Compl. 334.

Be esteemed+Subj. Compl. 333.
 Be flung+Subj. Compl. 334.
 Be found+Subj. Compl. 51, 334 & fn.
 Be found out to be 338.
 Be heard+Dative Infinitive 372.
 Be held+Subj. Compl. 334.
 Be held to be 338.
 Be home 160, 164.
 Be kept+Subj. Compl. 51, 334.
 Be laid+Subj. Compl. 334.
 Be left+Subj. Compl. 95, 314, 335; with Adv. as Compl. 340.
 Be let+Dative Infinitive 372.
 Be made+Subj. Compl. 331.
 Be made+Dative Infinitive 372.
 Be named+Subj. Compl. 335.
 Be preserved+Subj. Compl. 335.
 Be presumed+Subj. Compl. 335.
 Be pronounced+Subj. Compl. 335.
 Be proved+Subj. Compl. 335.
 Be pulled+Subj. Compl. 335.
 Be put out+Subj. Compl. 336.
 Be received+Subj. Compl. 336.
 Be reckoned+Subj. Compl. 336.
 Be reported+Subj. Compl. 51.
 Be reputed+Subj. Compl. 335.
 Be reputed: ~ for 339; ~ to be 338.
 Be seen+Dative Infinitive 372.
 (Be) set+Subj. Compl. 336.
 Be struck+Subj. Compl. 315 & fn., 337.
 Be supposed+Subj. Compl. 337.
 Be taken for granted 339 fn.
 Be termed+Subj. Compl. 51.
 Be thought+Subj. Compl. 337.
 Be thrown+Subj. Compl. 337.
 Be tried+Subj. Compl. 337.
 Bear (*d. v.*) 276 & fn. See also under 'Bore' and 'Borne.'
 Bear her a gratitude 276 fn.
 Bear off (*f. v.*) 355.
 Beat (*f. v.*) 351.

Beat him black and blue 351.
 beaten, The 86.
 beautiful, The 74, 78.
 Beautifully behaved 154.
 Beauty specialist 109.
 Beauty spot 108.
 Became angry 317 fn.
 Became aware 317 fn.
 Became intolerable 317.
 Became used to 317 fn.
 Become: Case after 246 fn.
 Become+Subj. Compl. 33, 294, 317 & fn.
 become his hand, A book would 245.
 become rather broken, Once firm voice, now 155.
 Bed-room windows 147.
 Bed-side 352.
 Before being sent 69.
 Before long 89.
 Before now 90.
 before your eyes, From 92.
 Beg (*d. v.*) 91, 276.
 Beg him to provide 289.
 Begged us to tell 300 fn.
 Begin (Began, etc.)+Dative Infinitive 23, 83, 94, 125, 166, 240, 250, 258 fn., 291, 305, 340.
 begun is half done, Well 103.
 Behave 304 fn.
 Behave(d) himself 304 & fn.
 Behave yourself (well) 304 fn.
 Behaved charmingly 304 fn.
 Behaved his best 261.
 behind every tomb, From 92.
 behind the church, From 92.
 Behold: with Adv. as Obj. Compl. 374.
 being exposed, The sense of 68.
 being knocked, Without 261.
 being now no rain, There 240.
 being sent, Before 69.

- Belgium's capital 116.
 Believe (*f. v.*) 362.
 Believe you honest 352.
 Beloved, His 123.
 below, Man 158.
 beneath, Hell 157.
 Beorht(e) (*O. E.*) 200.
 Beorhtl(e) (*O. E.*) 200 fn.
 Bequeath (*d. v.*) 276 & fn.
 Bequeathed me the name 276.
 Beryls to match these 143.
 Beseech (*d. v.*) 276.
 Beshrew me but 9.
 Beside themselves 135.
 Bespeak (*f. v.*) 360.
 Bespoke him a Dane 360.
 Best: At ~ 82, 99, 361 fn.; At the ~ 83; Behaved his ~ 261; Doing their ~ 252; Look your ~ 261; Play your ~ 255; Trying his ~ 231.
 beste, Atte (*M. E.*) 82 fn.
 Bestir 305 fn.
 Bestir himself 305.
 Bestow (*d. v.*) 276.
 Bestowed him such a blow 276.
 Bet (*d. v.*) 276.
 Betake oneself 305 & fn.
 Bethink me 308 fn.
 Bethink thee 303.
 Bethought him 308 fn.
 Bethought himself 305.
 better, All the 188.
 better, For the 77.
 better, His 100.
 better, Not a whit 171.
 better or for worse, For 81.
 better where, A 88.
 Better 85.
 between rosy clouds, From 92.
 beyond, The 89.
 Bible-Class 105.
 Bid (*d. v.*) 277. See also under 'Bade.'
 Bid (*f. v.*): with Infinitive as Compl. 355, 370. See also under 'Bade.'
 Bid+Obj.+Dative Infinitive 373.
 Bid one rack one's brain 370.
 Bids fair 207.
 Bids remembrance rise 370.
 Bind him hand and foot 181 fn.
 Bird's murderer 120.
 Birth-days 37, 56.
 Birthright 292.
 bitter bad, Is wanted 202.
 Bitter cold 209 & fn.
 Bitterly cold 209 fn.
 Black and blue: Beat him ~ 351; Pinch his arms ~ 351 fn.
 Bleeding heart 148.
 Bless me 20.
 Blessed-fair 216 fn.
 Blessed superior 216.
 blew a steady trade, It 259.
 blew a terrible storm, It 259.
 Blew coldly 343 fn.
 Blew him a kiss 277.
 blew its hardest, The gale 261.
 blind, The 72.
 Blind of one eye 222.
 Blinding lightning 213 fn.
 Blood-red 178.
 Bloody fine girl 205 fn.
 Bloody hot 205 fn.
 bloody likely, Not 205.
 Bloody passionate 205 fn.
 Bloody positive fellow 205 fn.
 Blooming hard work 216.
 Blooming noisome smell 216 fn.
 Blow (*d. v.*) 277 & fn. See also under 'Blew.'
 blowing autumn gales, The wind 259.
 blown a terrible blast, It has 259 fn.

- blows nobody good, That 277 fn.
 blue, Out of the 76 fn.
 blue of heaven, The 76.
 Blush+Subj. Compl. 319.
 Blushed a blush 255.
 Blushed scarlet 319.
 Blushing a deep pink colour 259.
 Body and soul 182.
 Boil+Subj. Compl. 315.
 Boil dry 315.
 bold of voice, Too wild, too rude and 223.
 Bond Street 109.
 Bore her no malice 276 fn.
 Bore me company 276.
 Bore Tess no ill-will 276 fn.
 born a fair woman, Been 332.
 born a lady, Was 309 fn.
 born and bred a West-country man, Was 314 fn.
 born free, There is none 100.
 Borne him off a captive 355.
 borne him two sons, Had 276.
 Borrowed garments 150.
 Boston's earliest church 116.
 Both ways 325.
 Bought them needful books 277.
 Bound hand and foot 181.
 Boundary stone 98, 308 fn.
 Bows his acknowledgments 262.
 Bow-window 107.
 Boyat'sya (*Rus.*) 303 fn.
 Boy messenger 107.
 Boy's clothes 119.
 Boy's education 120.
 boy's face, His 124.
 boy's rescue, The 115.
 Boys' Own Paper 114.
 Brand-new 73, 179 fn.
 Bran-new 179 fn.
 Brave it 270.
 Breadth: A finger's ~ 122; A hair's ~ 115, 122; A hand's ~ 122.
 Breast-high 176.
 Breathe the breath 256.
 Breathed deep content 263.
 Breathed her relief 262.
 Breathed his last 261.
 Breathing revenge 263.
 Breathing space 182.
 bred a blacksmith, Was 332.
 bred a scholar, Been 314.
 bred as a scholar, Are 339.
 bred for an English priest, Was 339.
 bred to be slaves, Were 339 fn.
 Bright: Shines ~ 200; Shone ~ 325.
 brightly, Shone 201 fn.
 Bring (*d. v.*) 277. See also under 'Brought.'
 Bring (*f. v.*): with Adv. as Compl. 378 fn.
 Bring her to 378 fn.
 Bring in (*d. v.*) 296.
 Britain's Isle 126.
 Britain's land 115.
 broad of his back, The 75.
 Broadly speaking 239.
 Broken words 267.
 Bröþor lufað sweostör (*O. E.*) 11.
 Brougham Street yard entrance 210 fn.
 brought a prisoner, Was 50, 311, 332.
 brought frozen, Was 332.
 Brought her in £ 350 a year 296.
 Brought them the ill-will 277.
 Bruto mató á Cesar (*Sp.*) 200 fn.
 buffet, Smote me a 252.
 Build (*d. v.*) 277, 286 fn.
 Build (*f. v.*) 277 fn.
 Buried Alive 347 fn.
 Burn+Subj. Compl. 311 & fn.
 Burn blue 311.
 Burned bread 356.
 Burning tapers 201 fn.

burnt grey and dim, The fire 140 fn.
 Burnt me down three houses 198.
 busily, Who are 341 fn.
 business Mr. Charles is, What 131.
 But: Different uses of 8-10.
 But (*adv.*) 8, 9, 73, 85, 118, 121, etc.
 But (*prep.*) 8, 62, 260, etc.; followed
 by Inf. 64; followed by Dat. Inf.
 63, 65, 233; followed by Adv. Phr.
 158.
 But (*sub. conj.*) 9, 290, etc.
 But (*pseudo-rel. pron.*) 9, 10, etc.
 But (*nonce noun & verb*) 10, 103.
 But: ~ to pay 63; ~ to provide 233;
 ~ to wait 65.
 but, Cannot 8 fn.
 but, Cannot choose 64.
 'but,' There is always 99.
 But me no buts 10, 103.
 Button: If you care a ~; The only
 chap I care a ~ 176 fn.
 Buy (*d. v.*) 42, 146, 277 & fn. See
 also under 'Bought.'
 By a hair's breadth 122.
 by far, The most picturesque 171 fn.
 By far the lightest weight 130.
 By George 21.
 By Jove 60.
 by many shades, Intenser 171 fn.
 By many years (his) senior 171 fn.
 by one inch, Longer 171 fn.
 by the head, Taller 171 fn.
 By the sly 81.
 By way of Liverpool 217.
 Byn him hannen ind fuotten (*Fris.*)
 181 fn.
 Bynde hym hande and fete 181 fn.

C

Cæsar's assassination 115.
 Calf's head 122.

Call (*d. v.*) 124, 278 & fn.
 Call (*f. v.*) 47, 49, 57, 90, 112, 227,
 350, 358.
 Call her false lover no names 278 fn.
 Call him wicked names 278 fn.
 Call it ugly names 278 fn.
 Call me names 278.
 Call me the Pied Piper 350.
 Call one so many soft names 124.
 Call them stupid 358.
 Call them that 358.
 Call to us to pause 94.
 Call women of that kind clever 358.
 called a fine teacher, Was 332.
 Called 'at the top of his voice, the
 shepherd's call 269 fn.
 called attractive, Be 311.
 Called me filthy names 278 fn.
 Calling its loudest 253.
 calls't thou him, Minion 358.
 calm, The 74.
 Calphurnia here 157.
 came cold, The air 319, 343 fn.
 Came home a lieutenant 311.
 Came off victor 322 fn.
 Came to, When she 346 fn.
 Came to scoff 225.
 Came to talk 99.
 Cameo-clear 178.
 Candle in hand 184.
 Cannot but laugh 8 fn.
 Cannot choose but hear 64.
 cannot find words to thank you, I
 144.
 Cannot help doing it 68.
 Cap in hand 184.
 Cape Horn 162.
 Captain Brown 229.
 care, What does Bessie 186.
 Care a button: ~, If you; ~, The
 only chap I 176 fn.
 care a damn, Don't 175.

care a hoot, Wouldn't 176.
 care a straw, Don't 175.
 Care not a curse 175 fn.
 Care nothing 187.
 care to be thought, She did not 337.
 cared a fig, None would have 174.
 Cared anything 186.
 cared three straws, Never 174.
 Careful (=carefully) 202.
 Careful not to irritate 229.
 Cares a whin-blossom 123, 175.
 Carry (*d. v.*) 278.
 Cast (*d. v.*) 278.
 Catch (*f. v.*) 358.
 Catch him napping 358.
 Cathedral Precincts 109.
 cats and dogs, Rain 268.
 caught red-handed, Been 332.
 Cause (*d. v.*) 278.
 Caused me to lose my temper 113.
 Ceased to look 65.
 cent, Worth a 174.
 Certain to disagree 229.
 certainty, Of a 222.
 Chain-bridge 106.
 Chain-gang 106.
 Chain stitch 106.
 Chambermaid 123.
 chanced to bethink me, I 308 fn.
 Chance's fool 323.
 Charge (*d. v.*) 278.
 charge thee to obey, I 247 fn.
 Chasm about fifty yards in diameter
 132.
 Cheque-book 72 fn.
 Chestnut-tree 105.
 Cheviot's mountains 115.
 畜生 185.
 Child wife 107.
 Child's play 115, 123.
 Children's magazine 114.
 Children's night attire 118.

Choked with sedges 264.
 choose to make a beast of yourself,
 If you 307.
 Church-bells 369.
 Christen (*f. v.*) 358.
 Christened him Beauty 358.
 Christening present 146.
 Christmas card 108.
 Church-going bell 149.
 City life 108.
 City's wall 336.
 Clasped her hand close 206 fn.
 clean, Nibbled 206.
 Clean forgot 206 fn., 209 fn.
 Clean forgotten 206, 209.
 Clean gone 209 fn.
 clean out of curl, Go 209 fn.
 clean over Jordan, Passed 209 fn.
 Clean ruined 209.
 Clean-shaven 212 fn.
 clean through the bounds of Asia,
 Roaming 209 fn.
 clear, Rang 325 fn.
 Close: Clasped her hand ~; Have
 been pressed ~; Living ~; Stood
 ~ 206 fn.; Stuck ~ 163 fn., 206 fn.;
 To look ~ 206.
 Close following 206.
 closed the door behind him, He
 308 fn.
 Closelier 214 fn.
 Closely: Clings ~; Followed ~;
 Looked ~; Stuck ~; Touch ~
 206 fn.
 closely, More 214 fn.
 closer, Looking 214.
 closest, Imitating Socrates 214.
 Closet to sleep in 275.
 Closet-door 377.
 Clover fields 147.
 Coal-black 178.
 Cock's stride 126.

- Cold: Bitter ~ 209 & fn.; Bitterly ~ 209 fn.
 cold shoulder, Turned him the 294.
 coldly, Blew 343 fn.
 Colonel Esmond 366.
 Colonel Pyncheon's grasp 320.
 colour is her hair, What 130.
 colour of a rotten apple, His face the 132.
 colour of peony, Turned the 314.
 Come (=become) 136 & fn.
 Come+Subj. Compl. 311, 315, 319 & fn. See also under 'Came.'
 come again, Here 's the old Pyncheon 156 fn.
 Come alive 319 fn.
 Come from the north poor 319.
 Come here to trade 224.
 Come sweeping along 373 fn.
 Come this way 160.
 Come thy ways 192.
 come to greet me once again, Ancient companions and servitors of mine 156 fn.
 come to judgement, A Daniel 154.
 come to life, Apollo 156 fn.
 come to look after my birds, The young woman 156.
 come to see me, There 's someone 156 fn.
 Comes back safe 319.
 comes favourable, The wind 319.
 Comes hard (upon) 319 fn.
 Comes me the prince 197.
 Comes true 319 fn.
 comfortable, Felt ever so much more 330.
 Coming her way 161.
 coming in of the tide, The 66 fn.
 Coming of age 136.
 Command (*d. v.*) 278.
 commanded to deliver, Was 335 fn.
- Commence+Subj. Compl. 313.
 commenced monarch, Cromwell 313
 Commit (*f. v.*) 355.
 Committed him close prisoner 355.
 common, In 82.
 common, Out of the 81, 82.
 common, The 74.
 common way, Out of the 82 fn.
 Communication trench 378.
 Companions' backs 277.
 Comparatively speaking 239.
 Compare (Quasi-Passive) 139, 140 fn.
 completing a tract, The 27 fn.
 complexion, Pale of 222.
 Concentrated, glowing, solid fire 311 fn.
 Confess (*f. v.*) 361.
 Confess the Princess cognisant 361.
 Consider (*f. v.*) 49, 350, 359.
 Consider: ~ as; ~ to be 366.
 Consider yourselves my guests 359
 considered a bad man, Was 311.
 considered a glorious thing, Was 332.
 considered as the highest learning, Was 339 fn.
 Considered you very timid 350.
 constancy itself, You are 133.
 Constäre (*L.*) 174 fn.
 constitit tribus assibus (*L.*) 174 fn.
 Continue: ~ to bloom 261; ~ to take an interest 125.
 Continue+Subj. Compl. 319 & fn.
 Continue friends 319.
 Continued irresolute 319 fn.
 Continued obstinate 319,
 Copper beech 107.
 Corduroy suit 283 fn.
 Coronation oath 247 fn.
 Cost 174 & fn.
 Coster (*O. F.*) 174 fn.
 Cost a long ancestral succession of

- spiders their life's labor 174 fn.
 Cost Dorrance a sleepless night or two 298 fn.
 Cost her an effort 298.
 Cost him but a crown 174.
 Cost him dearly 174 fn.
 Cost me a whole shilling 298 fn.
 Cost me many unhappy hours 298 fn.
 Cost me much trouble 298 fn.
 Cost me my life 298.
 Cost the temple the whole of its revenues 298 fn.
 Cost you nothing 298 fn.
 Cottage-door 254 f.
 Could not but be 8 fn.
 Could not help feeling satisfied 68.
 Council-hall 327.
 counted a healthy place, Is 333.
 Country road 108.
 country's honour, Our 116.
 country's wreck, His 120.
 Courageous of you 102.
 course, Of 204 fn., 222 fn.
 course, Ran its 260.
 course, Things of 135.
 Coüter (*Fr.*) 174 fn.
 coward to be afraid, You 236.
 coward to be frightened, Call me 227.
 Coy of speech 223.
 Crawl+Subj. Compl. 312.
 Crawled out a decrepit wreck 312.
 Create (*d. v.*) 279 & fn.
 created Duke, Was 333.
 credit, Does you 280 fn.
 Credit, and to spare 142.
 Cricket match 108.
 Cried her fill 262.
 Crown (*f. v.*) 234; 354.
 crown, Cost him but 174.
 Crown jewels 332.
 Crown of gold 135.
 crowned Emperor, Be 333.
 Crowned him king 354.
 Culpable in Providence 103 fn.
 Curious thing to understand 228 fn.
 Curious to know 229.
 curse, Care not a 175 fn.
 Cursed bad wine 216.
 Cursedly easy 216 fn.
 curse of our Indian possessions, That 111.
 customary time, He stayed his 166.
 Custom-House experience 109.
 Cut (Quasi-Passive) 330.
 Cut (*f. v.*) 357 & fn.
 Cut me short 357.
 Cut-off barrels 212 fn.
 cut short, Been 333.
 Cuts very smooth and easy 330.
 Cwic(e) (*O. E.*) 201 fn.
- D
- Dæges and nihtes (*O. E.*) 194 fn.
 damn, Don't care a 175.
 Damned awful 216 fn.
 Damned awkward 216 fn.
 Damned cold 216.
 Damned filthy dog 216 fn.
 Danced in, all alive 347.
 Danced ten dances 254.
 Dancing days 145.
 Dancing lesson 144.
 Dancing pair 147.
 Daring: ~ to tame 62; ~ to touch 363.
 Dash these buts 10.
 Daughter of eighteen 86.
 Daughter's side 118.
 daunted, Nothing 189.
 Dawn+Subj. Compl. 315.
 dawned grey, His last morning 315, 343 fn.

- Day: One ~ (of future time) 162, (of past time) 164, 308 fn.; Some ~ 363; That ~ 210, 298 fn.; The 5th ~ 164; The next ~ 24; The other ~ 22; The same ~ 164; This very ~ 238.
- Day and night 167.
- day before yesterday, The 58.
- Day long: All ~; The ~ 170.
- Day's Journey, The First 121.
- Days (Gen.): What do you do ~; Early ~; So far forth ~ 194.
- Days (Plur.): Forty ~ 262; Of old ~ 220; Two ~ 210 fn.
- days and nights, Nine 167.
- days' time, In three 121.
- D—d thin 216 fn.
- Dead: Strike the lot of us ~ 352; Was struck ~ 337.
- dead, Left him for 82 fn.
- dead, The 72, 80 fn., 85, 86; treated as Singular 251.
- Dead and living 80 fn.
- Dead drunk 204.
- dead of night, The 74.
- Deal (*d. v.*) 279.
- deal, Stunned me a good 169 fn.
- Dealt him several seemingly severe blows 279.
- dear abide it, Some will 201.
- dear, A 84.
- dear, My 226.
- Dear me 61.
- dears, My 84.
- deceased, The 85, 86.
- Deceased lover 154 fn.
- Deceive: without Obj. 32.
- deck, Walked the 162.
- Declare (*f. v.*) 47, 97, 359, 360.
- declared a bankrupt, Was 333.
- Declared Christianity the official religion 360.
- declared unfit, Was 333.
- Declar'st thy will fulfilled 359.
- Deem (*f. v.*) 359.
- Deemed it time 359.
- Deemed thee ever right 359.
- deep, The 79.
- Deep calleth unto deep 80.
- deep of his heart, The 76.
- deep of night, The 74.
- Deep-set 212.
- deepest deep of her heart, The 76.
- Deeply-infix'd fear 212 fn.
- Deeply read 152.
- Defender of Faith 111.
- degree more tolerable, A 172.
- Deign (*d. v.*) 279.
- Delicious: Smelt ~ 329; Tasted ~ 330 & fn.
- delighted to hear, I 'm 235.
- Deliver (*d. v.*) 279.
- Demean 305 fn.
- Demeaned himself 305 & fn.
- Demeaned himself rough, rude, and wildly 341 fn.
- demoniac, The 71 fn.
- Denied him an entrance 279 fn.
- Denied his heart his dearest wish 279.
- Denote (*f. v.*) 360.
- Denoted him an inmate 360.
- Deny (*d. v.*) 279 & fn.
- denying, There was no 68.
- Dēor(e) (*O. E.*) 201 fn.
- Departed childhood 153.
- Deports herself 305.
- Depressed to learn 226.
- Des Abends (*Germ.*) 194 fn.
- Des Morgens (*Germ.*) 194 fn.
- Descending sun 343 fn.
- Deserves death 64 fn.
- Deserves to die 64.
- Deserves your care 245.

- Desire: ~ to know 288, (cf. 312); ~ to see 357 fn.
- Despatch (*d. v.*) 279.
- determined, The 87.
- deuce, What the 184.
- Deuced pretty 216.
- Deucedly ashamed 216 fn.
- Devastating egotism 43.
- devil, How the 184.
- devil you did, The 185.
- Devil's heart 123, 175.
- Devilish clever 204 fn.
- Devilish little 125.
- Devilish nice 204.
- Devilishly pretty 204 fn.
- diameter, In 132.
- dickens, What the 184.
- Dickens novel 69.
- Did me the most irreparable harm 280 fn.
- Didn't trust him sixpence-worth 175.
- Die + Subj. Compl. 311, 320 & fn., 343 fn.
- die, Fools they cannot 311.
- Die a dry death 258 fn.
- Die a martyr 320.
- Die a thousand deaths 258.
- Die a true woman 343 fn.
- Die an everlasting death 39, 256.
- Die like a true Scottish woman 343 fn.
- Die Tür ist zu (*Germ.*) 346 fn.
- Die your debtor 320 fn.
- Died a bishop 320 fn.
- Died a Christian 320 fn.
- Died as men 339.
- Difficult man to please 228 fn.
- diligent, The 80 fn.
- Diningroom 291 fn.
- disaster to fear, There was still one 141.
- Discretion itself 316 fn.
- Dismiss (*d. v.*) 280.
- Dismissed them the society 280.
- Disporting thyself 305.
- distance from it, We lived a 160.
- divinely, Smelling 342 fn.
- Do (*d. v.*) 42, 78, 191, 280 & fn. See also under 'Did,' 'Does,' 'Done,' etc.
- Do her hair 180.
- Do himself some mischief 280 fn.
- Do me a shrewd turn 280 fn.
- Do my own doings 254.
- Do us good 78.
- Do us the favour 280 fn.
- Do my utmost 252.
- Do them justice 280 fn.
- do well to wear gloves, You 239 fn.
- do wrong to lose my temper, I 239 fn.
- Do your worst 253.
- Dr. Bobbett's prescriptions 118.
- Does me good 42.
- Does you credit 280 fn.
- Doesn't car straw 175.
- Doesn't matter a horse-radish 175.
- Doesn't value a rotten nut 175.
- Dog-weary 179.
- Dog's life 285 fn.
- Dog's sleep 124.
- Dog's tricks 198.
- Doing her injustice 280 fn.
- doing it, The 67 fn.
- Doing their best to make him president 252.
- Domum (*L.*) 160 fn.
- done, That 240.
- done, What I wanted 363.
- done, Well begun is half 103.
- Done her a good turn 280 fn.
- done me, The honour you have 280 fn.
- Done me too great a service 280 fn.
- Done you a cruel wrong 280 fn.

Don't care a damn 175.
 Don't value a fourpenny piece 175.
 Door-knobs 153.
 Door-yard 194 fn.
 doubt, No 62, 99, 186.
 doubt me, I 303 fn.
 Doubtless 52, 211.
 Down: as Subj. Compl. 345 & fn.
 down, The sun was already 345.
 down below, From 94.
 Down train 156.
 Drank approval 263.
 Drank his health 294.
 Drank the marriage health 263.
 Dreadful of them 102.
 Dreadful to listen 236.
 Dream had dreams 250.
 Dream'd a vision 251.
 Dreamed a dream 250 fn.
 Dreamed dreams 250 fn.
 dreaming, Without 67 fn.
 Drinc nu pine fylle (*O. E.*) 253 fn.
 Drink: without Obj. 32 fn., 62.
 Drink (Quasi-Passive) 331.
 Drink to the health 263 fn.
 Drive (*f. v.*) 47, 356.
 Drive me mad 356.
 Driving-belt 148 f.
 droll and laughable, The 74.
 Drop (*d. v.*) 280.
 drunk, He was very 152 fn.
 drunk, Three parts 231.
 Drunk his fill 253.
 drunk too flat, (The wine) 331.
 Drunken blackguard 152.
 Drunken man 125.
 Duel, Fought a 250.
 Duke of Gloucester's purse 127 fn.
 Dukes it 270.
 dumb, Struck us 356.
 Duncan's murderer 115.
 during one or two boats of illness,

Except 93.
 Dutch, The 72 fn.
 Dye (*f. v.*) 180.
 Dyed her hair red 180.
 Dying: ~ to be; ~ to go 229 fn.;
 ~ to know 229.
 Dying and dead 85 fn.
 Dying day 149.
 Dying mother's breast 206 fn.

E

Each morning 89.
 Ealne weg (*O. E.*) 192 fn.
 Early days 194.
 early morning, Of an 219 fn.
 Earn (*d. v.*) 280.
 Ears to hear 143.
 Easier said than done 214.
 Easiest (=most easily) 214.
 East (*Adv. Accus.*) 370.
 Easy (=easily) 207 & fn.
 Easy: ~ to be obtained 236; ~ to
 describe 228; ~ to make fun of
 239 fn.
 easy, Take it 207 fn.
 Easy man to deceive 239 fn.
 easy matter to find, No 228 fn.
 Easy of accomplishment 223.
 Easy-going creature 213 fn.
 Easy-yielding spirit 213.
 Eat: without Obj. 32 fn.
 Eat (Quasi-Passive) 330. Cp. 228.
 Eat (*f. v.*) 351.
 Eat grapes thy fill 253 fn.
 eating, It's perfectly heartless your
 67 fn.
 Eating our hearts out to know 230.
 eats, How nice the burnt pig 330.
 edge, On 136.
 Egli lo guardò fisso (*Ital.*) 200 fn.
 Eines Tages (*Germ.*) 194 fn.

Ejaculated such applause 263.
 Elders 85.
 Elect (*f. v.*) 47.
 elected a member, Been 333.
 Emily's loss 120.
 Enclose (*d. v.*) 281.
 Enclose you a draft 281.
 end, No 162 fn.
 Endeavoured to lay 284.
 England's chiefest architect 244.
 England's green and pleasant land
 126.
 English, The 72, 234.
 Enjoin (*d. v.*) 281.
 Enough: ~ to drink 218; ~ to gain
 230; ~ to ravish 66 fn.
 Enough and to spare 141.
 enough suffering to show, There was
 25.
 enough to gain, Fortunate 230.
 Ensure (*d. v.*) 281.
 Ensures her my sympathies 281.
 entered a pensioner, Was 334.
 entire of me, The 79.
 Envied him this mighty privilege
 281 fn.
 Envied them not their wings 281.
 Envy (*d. v.*) 281 & fn.
 Er ging seines Weges (*Germ.*) 192 fn.
 Escaped nuns 153.
 Escaped prisoner 154 fn.
 Esteem (*f. v.*) 359.
 Esteem as 366.
 Esteem him wise 359.
 Esteem it as a favour 366.
 esteemed favourable, Is 333.
 Esteemed him a beast 359.
 euch unter des Feuers Blitzen,
 Ritt er (*Germ.*) 199 fn.
 Evening: At ~ 110, 217; Last ~ 218;
 In the ~ 218; Of an ~ 219; One
 ~ 133; That ~ 164; The whole ~

167; Yesterday ~ 152 fn.
 Evening air 306.
 Evening game of cards 109.
 Evening hymn 108.
 Evening's Adventure, The First 121.
 Evening's reading 121.
 Evenings: Of ~ 220; Of the sum-
 mer ~ 219 fn.
 events, At all 56.
 Event by event 183.
 Every inch 170.
 Every moment 165.
 Every New Year's Day 126.
 Every why 88.
 Everybody else's business 128.
 Evidently 56.
 evil, The 80 fn.
 Exceeding glad 215.
 excellent, Thou didst it 201.
 Except: followed by *Adv. Phr.* 70,
 93, 154, 219 fn.
 Excuse (*d. v.*) 281.
 Excuse thee all 281.
 Exeter gaol 339 fn.
 exhausted, Sank back 325.
 Expect to see 344.
 expects you to pray, He 255.
 expedient, The 73.
 Expel (*d. v.*) 281.
 Expel them the convent 281.
 Expelled the Austrians from 281 fn.
 Explores his solitary flight 252.
 extent, Of vast 136.
 eye, Blind of one 222.
 Eye sight 341.
 Eye to eye 183.
 Eye-witness 108.

F

Face to face 117, 183, 324.
 Faded flower 150.

Faded ink 154 fn.
 Faded old Scotch costumes 153.
 Faded, shabby drawing-room 154 fn.
 Fast(e) (*O. E.*) 201 fn.
 Fair: Bids ~; Speak me ~ 207;
 Play ~ 207 fn.
 Fair is foul 80.
 Fall+Subj. Compl. 320 & fn. See
 also under 'Fallen' and 'Fell.'
 Fall asleep 348.
 Fall short 320.
 fallen, The 86.
 Fallen a prey 320.
 Fallen an easy spoil 320.
 Fallen Cherub 152.
 Fallen flat 320 fn.
 fallen out of heaven, An angel 156.
 Fallen snow 154 fn.
 Falling drops of water 148.
 Falling sickness 149.
 false, Played me 207.
 false for true, Taking 80.
 falsely, Speak 207 fn.
 Family Ford 266.
 Family likeness 83.
 Famish'd bee 206 fn.
 famous, The 73.
 Fan (*f. v.*): with Adv. as Compl.
 376.
 Fan aflame the gift 376.
 far, By 130, 171 fn.
 far and near, From 89.
 Far from normal 100.
 far to seek, Is not 223 fn.
 Fare thee well 302.
 Fare thou well 302 fn.
 Farmer Flamborough 287.
 Fashion: French ~; Otter ~ 180.
 fashion, In sailor 180 fn.
 Fashionables 84.
 fast, Run 201.
 fastest, Ran his 262.

fat, Run 325.
 Father's employer 115.
 Father's room 334.
 Father's son 117.
 fatigues forgotten, Our 240.
 Favour (=resemble in countenance)
 245.
 favour to read, Do us the 280 fn.
 Fear: Case after 246 fn.
 fear me, I 303, 308 fn.
 Fear ye their fear 251.
 fear'st not, His violence thou 245.
 Feast it 270.
 Feature (=resemble in countenance)
 246.
 feature, Severe of 223.
 Feel+Subj. Compl. 62, 68, 110,
 216 fn., 291, 312 & fn., 320, 321 &
 fn.; (Quasi-Passive) 329, 330. See
 also under 'Felt.'
 Feel (*f. v.*) 351, 362; with Inf. as
 Compl. 257, 369.
 feel, How lonely she must 321 fn.
 feel a perfect wreck, I 312 fn.
 Feel indebted 291.
 Feel his heart beating 362.
 Feel like 105, 343 fn.
 Feel to be 366.
 feel very happy, I 321 fn.
 feels, How oddly my head 343 fn.
 feels cold and musty, This room
 321 fn.
 feels like May, The March sun 105.
 See also 343 fn.
 feels pretty firm, The water pipe
 329.
 feels so soft, Her hair 329.
 feet, Lame of his 223.
 feet beneath, Twenty 173.
 Fell asleep 348.
 Fell back dead 314.
 Fell due (foul) 320 fn.

Fell sick (silent) 320 fn.
 felt, How good it 329 fn.
 felt a crab, He 320.
 Felt a pulse beat 369.
 felt an admiral, I 312.
 felt as heavy as lead, My heart
 329 fn.
 felt dry and tight, Her throat 321 fn.
 felt ever so much more comfortable,
 My bed 330.
 felt faint and confused, She 321 fn.
 Felt her husband's eye rest 369.
 felt hot, The room 140 fn.
 felt my sleeve pulled, I 362.
 felt sick and faint, I 321.
 felt small and weak, I 321 fn.
 felt solid and cool, The shade 329 fn.
 Felt something alive moving 351.
 felt sure, I 140 fn.
 Fere of his hate (*M. E.*) 246 fn.
 Fetch (*d. v.*) 281.
 Fetch me my gloves 281.
 Fields of flax 162.
 Fiend 87 fn.
 fifty yards in diameter, Chasm about
 132.
 fig, None would have cared a 174.
 fight, Fought a good 256.
 Fight a good fight 258 fn.
 Fighting my way 264.
 file, Single 181.
 file, In single 181 fn.
 Fill (*d. v.*) 282.
 Fill: Cried her ~ 262; Drunk his
 ~ 253; Eat grapes thy ~ 253 fn.;
 Have his ~ of talk; Having his ~
 of hunting 253 fn.; Sleep their ~
 262; Sucked her ~ 254.
 Find (*d. v.*) 282. See also under
 'Found.'
 Find (*f. v.*) 48, 49, 50, 131, 133, 153,
 189, 350, 351, 357, 358; with Inf.

as Compl. 23; with Adv. as
 Compl. 374, 377 fn. See also under
 'Found.'
 Find it expressed 48.
 Find the name written 49.
 Find the water cold 351.
 Find to be 366.
 find words to thank you, I cannot
 144.
 finding of a star, The 66 fn.
 Fine (*d. v.*) 282.
 fineness, Of excessive 136.
 finger's breadth, A 122.
 fingers' ends, At one's 115.
 Fingers-Ends, At his 124.
 Fire-guard 118.
 Fire-new 179 fn.
 Firm-set earth 212 fn.
 First-born 87.
 first opportunity, The 169.
 first thing, (The) 169 & fn.
 first thing to settle, The 140.
 first time, The 168 fn.
 first to break the silence, The 143.
 fiso, Egli lo guardò (*Ital.*) 200 fn.
 Fit to live in 228.
 Five shillings the bottle 177 fn.
 Flank and rear 182.
 Flashed suspicion 264.
 Flat: (The wine) drunk too ~ 331;
 His dinner tasted ~ 329.
 flat of his back (hand), The 75.
 flat of our blades, The 351.
 Flea-bite 199 fn.
 Fling (*d. v.*) 282.
 Fling (*f. v.*) 356 fn.
 Flower-bed 256.
 Flown his cloister'd flight 256.
 Flung me a look of great scorn
 282.
 flung open, Was 334.
 Flung open the door 356 fn.

- Flush+Subj. Compl. 314.
flushed up red, I 314.
Flying day 153.
Flying-fish 148.
Foaming brine 347 fn.
Folding up the paper 239.
Followed closely 206 fn.
followed me, I 303.
following, Close 206.
fool, Act the 259 fn.
fool to go, You will be a 227.
foolish of you, How 102.
Foolish woman to think 236.
Fools, to have left 236.
Fool's errand 115, 123.
Fool's talk 123.
Foot it 269 & fn., 271.
Footman 373 fn.
For (*conj.*) 27, 96, 101, 112, 211, 215, etc.
For a little while 254.
For a while 163 fn., 251.
For all 20.
For another instant 168 fn.
For better or for worse 81.
For certain: Know ye ~ 367; Take this ~ 367 fn.
For conscience' sake 115, 125.
For daring: ~ to tame 62; ~ to touch 363.
for dead, Left him 82 fn.
for drowned, Gave him 367 fn.
For goodness' sake 125.
for granted, Take 85 fn., 367 & fn.
For him to come 97.
For long 89.
For man to tell 96.
For me: (He) pulled my ears ~; You ruined my life ~ 199 fn. See also 206, exam. (21).
For me to attempt (use) 97.
For men to search 96.
For mercy's sake 115, 125.
For my daughter to dislike me 120.
For old sake's sake 125.
For so long 276 fn.
For the better 77.
For the infantry to swim through 113.
For the worse 78.
For to-day 94.
For to-night 169.
For us to set 97.
For you to go (know) 97.
For you to talk 344 fn.
Forbade him the house 282.
Forbid (*d. v.*) 282 & fn.
force, Of 221.
Forced to play a sorry farce 255.
Foreigner's 117.
Forgave him his silly ways 282 fn.
Forgave the Mayor his curtness 282.
Forgive (*d. v.*) 282 & fn.
forgotten, Our fatigues 240.
Formed a contrast 247 fn.
Fortunate enough to gain 230.
Forty days 162.
Fought a Duel 250.
Fought a good fight 256.
Fought a long battle 259.
Foul and fair 80.
Foul is fair 80.
foul to fair, From 81.
found a cold atmosphere unfavourable 350.
found a dangerous protector, Be 334.
found difficult, Whom we all 50.
Found Fleur attractive 358.
Found him a bounden slave 357.
found much to think of, He 221.
found open, Was 334.
Found out to be the greatest gentle-

- folk 338.
Found the door ajar 377 fn.
Found us a cab 282.
found useful, Be 51.
fourpenny piece, Don't value a 175.
Frankly speaking 56.
Frater sororem amat (*L.*) 11.
Free-spoken 151 fn.
Free to leave 28.
French, The 72.
French fashion 180.
fresh and merrily, Look 341.
Fresh of spirit 222.
Friend 87 fn.
friend's choosing, Of your 119.
friends, Let us continue 319.
Friends am I with you all 313 fn.
friends with me, You 'll be 313 fn.
friends with the boy, I stayed good 313.
friends with thee, I am 313 fn.
From afar (off) 94 & fn.
From bad to worse 81.
From before our eyes 92.
From behind a thin fleece of cloud 343 fn.
From behind every tomb 92.
From behind the church 92.
From between rosy clouds 92.
From down below 94.
From far and near 89.
From foul to fair 81.
From of old 94.
From on high 93.
From round the tree 92.
From to die 63 fn.
From under every brass 92.
From within the houses 92.
From without 89.
Front-door bell 110.
full, To the 81, 268 fn.
full at Albert, Looked 210 fn.
Full down 210.
Full fifteen stone 210 fn.
Full high 210 fn.
Full many a flower 210 fn.
Full speed 180.
full speed, At 180 fn.
Full sweet 210 fn.
Fully two days 210 fn.
Funkel-neu (*Germ.*) 179 fn.
Furious every charger neighed 343 fn.
- G
- Gade (*Dan.*) 192 fn.
Gaiety itself 313.
Gaily doesn't mean decked in gay dresses 101.
Gaily was gaily dressed 101.
Gain (*d. v.*) 282.
game, Played a 255.
Garden flower 108.
Garden gate 370.
Gasse (*Germ.*) 192 fn.
Gata (*Sw.*) 192 fn.
Gather (*d. v.*) 283.
Gave a short laugh 244.
Gave her back her power 296.
Gave her horse its head 283.
Gave him for drowned 367 fn.
Gave him (me) to drink 299.
Gave his look another meaning 283 fn.
Gave me a stare 213 fn.
Gave me to understand 299. See also the foot-note.
Gave the little page to know 300.
Gebindap his honda and his fet (*O. E.*) 181 fn.
Gehen Sie Ihres Weges (*Germ.*) 192 fn.
general, In 82, 99, 325.

- Generals 85.
 Get+Subj. Compl. 188, 255, 321.
 Get (*d. v.*) 283 & fn.
 Get (*f. v.*) 49, 354, 355. See also under 'Got.'
 Get me some water 283 fn.
 Get older (worse) 321.
 Get this man a horse 283.
 Get your breakfast ready 354.
 Gets the tea ready 49.
 Getting a big boy 321.
 Girl's shoulder 163.
 Girls' school 114.
 Give (*d. v.*) 42, 121, 137, 150, 213 fn., 283 & fn., 286 fn., 296, 361. See also 44, 91, 95, 177.
 Give for drowned 367 fn.
 Give me thy daughter to wife 368 fn.
 Give me to know 300 fn. See also under 'Gave.'
 Give him much wrong'd 367 fn.
 Give thee to wife 368 fn.
 give you, How long shall I 91.
 Give you till to-morrow morning 91.
 given, Miss Trant was 46.
 given me, The ring was 45.
 gives me pain to speak, It 42.
 Glad: ~ to fix 20; ~ to see 25, 226.
 glanced round to see, He 224.
 Go+Subj. Compl. 33, 34, 125, 167, 178, 312, 313, 314, 315, 321 & fn., 322. See also under 'Going,' 'Gone,' and 'Went.'
 Go clean out of curl 209 fn.
 Go crazy 316.
 Go free 321.
 Go her ways 193.
 Go it 272.
 Go my own ways 254.
 Go my ways 193.
 Go that way 219.
 Go to the bad 74.
 Go(es) wrong 125, 249 fn., 321. See also under 'Went.'
 God above 158.
 God Almighty 37.
 God's words (works) 237.
 God of slepes heyre (*M. E.*) 127 fn.
 Gode pancode (*O. E.*) 246 fn.
 Going about bare-footed 321.
 going fast, There is no 69.
 Going grey 315.
 Going mad 322.
 Going out and concealing myself 240.
 Going red 322 fn.
 Going short journeys 161.
 Going that ways 193.
 going to and fro, The 67 fn.
 Going to develop 162 fn.
 Going to get 58.
 Going to mete me 286.
 Going to relate 73.
 Going to see Mr. Truby 69.
 Going to stay 166.
 gold, Crown of 135.
 gold, Helmet of 130 fn.
 gold, The hilt and scabbard were 130.
 gold, The studs are 130 fn.
 Gold ring 107.
 Golden ring 106.
 Gone lame 314 fn.
 Gone livid 322 fn.
 Gone serious 321 fn.
 gone to bed Henry Jekyll, I had 321.
 Good: Do us ~ 78; Does me 42.
 good, She would never be any 131.
 good, Smells so 329 fn.
 good, The 80 fn.
 good fifteen hundred a year, A 288.
 Good gracious me 61.

- Good heavens 61.
 Good Lord 61.
 good-nature itself, She was 317.
 Good-night kiss 349.
 goodness' sake, For 125.
 Gooseberry wine 373 fn.
 Got ourselves shipshape 355.
 Got my left arm badly 376.
 got to say, What have you 82.
 Got to sleep 250.
 Got you safe 355.
 Grace me no grace 297.
 Graced person of our Banquo 116.
 Gracious goodness 21.
 Grant (*d. v.*) 43, 283 & fn., 301.
 Grant (*f. v.*) 361 & fn.
 Grant her fair 361.
 Grant her her devastating egotism 43.
 Grant him a drone 361 fn.
 Grant me this favour 283.
 Gravel-pit 107.
 Gravel-walk 107.
 great and good, The 72.
 greater, A 83.
 green, Her dress was a vivid 130.
 Grew accustomed 318 fn.
 Grew up to be 234.
 Grew worse 322.
 grey and dim, The fire burnt 140 fn.
 Grieve to see 235, 357.
 Grieved to lose you 227.
 Grim of mien 223.
 Grinding room 208 fn.
 Grinned a ghastly smile 260.
 Grinning at me his gloating hatred 264.
 Grinning at me with restrained delight 268 fn.
 Groped his way 264.
 ground to stand upon, An inch of 144.
 Grow+Subj. Compl. 71, 84, 108, 253 fn., 318 fn., 322. See also under 'Grew.'
 Growled a sort of acquaintance 268 fn.
 Grown man 154 fn.
 Grown-up son 154 fn.
 Grudge (*d. v.*) 284 & fn.
 Guarantee (*d. v.*) 284.
 H
 Had him in my arms a baby 363.
 Had long to wait 91.
 had no choice but to wait, I 65.
 had no time to talk, I 144.
 Had not very long to wait 91.
 Had the traveller or stranger visit us 373 fn.
 Had: ~ to elapse 62; ~ go 253.
 Hadde of age fouytiene yer (*M. E.*) 129 fn.
 Hail-fellow-well-met 306 fn.
 hair's breadth, A 115, 122.
 Half way up 170.
 Häm (*O. E.*) 160 fn.
 Hampstead Heath 108.
 Ham sandwich 107.
 Hand (*d. v.*) 284.
 hand, Heavy of 223.
 Hand and foot 181 & fn.
 Hand in hand 89 fn., 183, 198.
 hand to mouth, Lives of 134.
 hand's breadth, A 122.
 hands on the table, His 184 fn.
 Happily 56.
 Hard: ~ to bear 228; ~ to describe 237; ~ to please 55.
 Hard man to satisfy 239 fn.
 Hard of hearing 34, 223.
 Hard question to answer 228 fn.
 Hard-working man 111.

- Hardest: Blew its ~ 261; Tried his ~ 253.
 harm's way, Out of 115, 126.
 Harry's bed-side 352.
 橋を渡る 247 fn.
 Haste thee 302.
 Hast'ning ills 320 fn.
 Have (*f. v.*) 58, 116, 363; with Inf. as Compl. 371, 373 fn.; with Adv. as Compl. 378. See also under 'Had.'
 Have + Obj. + Dative Infinitive 373 fn.
 Have a day off 378.
 have a train to take, I 140.
 Have him debase himself 371.
 Have him to dine 373 fn.
 Have him well to friend 368 fn.
 Have his fill of talk 253 fn.
 Have it yours 363.
 Have me go 371.
 Have my eyes open 363.
 Have my son ill 363.
 have no objection to receive me, If you should 289.
 Have nobody left 363.
 Have so much to learn 141.
 Have them fly 371.
 Have this man to thy wedded husband 368 fn.
 have till dinner-time, You can 91.
 have till ten to-night, You 91.
 Have to look 58.
 have to say, What Captain Brown can 229.
 Have you burnt alive 363.
 Have you fall (read) 371.
 have you got to say, What 82.
 haven't a rag to wear, I 140.
 having any, The 67 fn.
 having been born, His 69.
 Having his fill of hunting 253 fn.
 having lived, Regret 69.
 having nothing to do, The 67 fn.
 Hawk's nose 123.
 He kneeling 240.
 He plucked me ope his doublet 197.
 He visto á Roma (*Sp.*) 200 fn.
 head shorter, A 171.
 Hear: without Obj. 32.
 Hear (*d. v.*) 284.
 Hear (*f. v.*) 48, 362; with Inf. as Compl. 148, 325, 369, 378. See also under 'Heard.'
 Hear her sing 369.
 Hear not my steps, which way they walk 248.
 Hear the church-bells ring 369.
 hear the learn'd Bellario, what he writes, You 248.
 Heard Bertie come 369.
 Heard him abuse me 369.
 Heard the door closing 48.
 heard to chink, Was 372.
 Heard waters muttering 362.
 hearing, Hard of 43, 223.
 Hearing distance 283.
 hearing of this, The 66 fn.
 hears his children their lessons, He 284.
 heart, Mighty of 223.
 Heart-failure 285.
 Heart of stone 135.
 heart's content, To one's 115, 126.
 heart's ease, At 83.
 Heaved a deep sigh 244.
 Heaven's light 178.
 Heavily-laden carts 212 fn.
 Heavy laden 212.
 Heavy of hand 223.
 Height to be attained 142.
 heinous sin is it in me, What 65.
 held a rancorous enemy, Be 234.
 Held me out her little hand 296.
 Held the door open 364.

- held to be the birthplace, Is 338.
 Hell: What in ~; Who the ~; Why the ~; The ~ you have 185 fn.
 Hell beneath 157.
 Help to bear this away 378 fn.
 Helped to make 69.
 Hen run 97.
 Hence! home! 30 fn.
 Her husband and my lord's return 127 fn.
 Her rescue 120 fn.
 her ways, Go 193.
 here, Calphurnia 157.
 here, The 88.
 here, Thou lovest 88.
 hereafter, The 88.
 Hereward's entrance 120.
 Hiding place 145.
 Hie thee hither 302.
 Hie you to horse 199.
 東を指す 247 fn.
 High: From on ~ 93; On ~ 226.
 High and low 81.
 High-gravel blind 179 fn.
 higher, Rank 214.
 highest, Wills the 253.
 Hill-side 108.
 Him hamweard ferdon (*O. E.*) 308.
 Hire me to queen it 270.
 Hired servants 141.
 His appointment 115.
 His better 100.
 His country's wreck 120.
 his customary time, He stayed 166.
 His face turned up towards the sky 75.
 His hondis and feet bounden (*M. E.*) 181 fn.
 his Learning, A man of 124.
 His orders 114 & fn.
 His royal highness the duke 19.
 his ways, Went 193.
 his years, Men of 117.
 Hit (*d. v.*): with Cogn. Obj. 296.
 Hitting his enemy such a blow 296.
 Hoc constitit mihi tribus assibus (*L.*) 174 fn.
 Hold (*f. v.*) 364. See also under 'Held.'
 Hold on tight 208 fn.
 Hold out (*d. v.*) 296.
 Hold your course unchanged 364.
 Holds me still a child 364.
 Home 160 & fn., 161, 164, 169, 219 fn., 311, 324.
 Home: All the way ~ 161; On your way ~ 158.
 hondis and feet bounden, His (*M. E.*) 181 fn.
 Honey-questing bees 147.
 Honourable in ye 103 fn.
 Honoured friend 151.
 Hook it 271.
 Hook-worm 321.
 hoot, Wouldn't care a 176.
 Hope to stand 326 fn.
 Hoped to catch him napping 358.
 Hopelessly doesn't seem to make much sense 100.
 Horn-handle 107.
 horse to ride on, No 271.
 horse-radish, Doesn't matter a 175.
 hospitals, Walked London 169.
 Hot to strike 263.
 Hotel it 271.
 hour, The very same 327.
 hour to spare, An 142 fn.
 hour to spend, A pensive 303.
 hour's walking, An 121.
 hours later, Two 110.
 hours' duration, Three 115.
 House-maid 39.
 House of Commons man 105.
 House to be let 133.

House to let 137 f.
 Housing question 8 & fn.
 How: ~ to begin 98; ~ to behave 304 fn.; ~ to do 221 fn.; ~ to move 257; ~ to practise 371; ~ to sow 98.
 How are you 344.
 how-d'ye-do, A 101.
 How foolish of you 102.
 How if 344 fn.
 How in the world 185 fn.
 How long does it take 91 fn.
 How long shall I give you 91.
 How long she (I) had to live 91.
 How sweet (unkind) of you 102.
 How the devil 184.
 How very nice (selfish, trivial) of you (him) 102.
 Howled a melancholy welcome 264.
 Hunter's sport 119.
 Hunting knife 145.
 Huntsmen 182.
 Hūs(ian) (O. E.) 8 fn.
 Hwæt (O. E.) 186 fn.
 Hwy (O. E.) 186 fn.

I

I am, Before Abraham was 6.
 I am friends with thee 313 fn.
 I am told 46.
 I doubt me 303 fn.
 I fear me 303, 308 fn.
 I followed me 303.
 I hope...? 38.
 'I' is here introduced 99.
 I O U'S 123.
 I repent me 304.
 I thought me 304.
 Iceland wife 109.
 idle, The 80 fn.
 Ihres Weges, Gehen Sie (Germ.)

192 fn.
 Ill-applied moderation 237.
 Ill-favouredly: as Compl. 374.
 Ill man 345 fn.
 Ill-read young women 151 fn.
 Ill wind 277 fn.
 Ill-written 151.
 'I 'm afraid,' Any 99.
 imaginable, Pleasantest way 32.
 Imagine (f. v.) 359.
 Imagined it a man 359.
 Impatient: ~ to behold 133; ~ to know 305.
 Impending cliffs 26.
 importance, Matter of 134.
 Impose (d. v.) 284.
 impossible, The 78.
 Impossible to dislike or despise 239 fn.
 impossible to restrain, It was 35.
 In: as Obj. Compl. 378; as Subj. Compl. 345 fn.
 In a word 236.
 In an instant 181.
 In another-guess manner 192 fn.
 In case 20.
 In common 82.
 in diameter, Fifty yards 132.
 In earnest 82, 83.
 in eight shillings, Stands me 298 fn.
 In front of 20.
 In general 82, 99, 325.
 in hand, Candle (Cap) 184.
 in hell, What 185 fn.
 In length sixty yards 132.
 in me, What heinous sin is it 62.
 In order that 20.
 In particular 82.
 in Providence, Culpable 108 fn.
 In sailor fashion 180 fn.
 In short 56, 83.
 In single file 181 fn.

In that 59.
 in that musty house, Instead of 93 fn.
 in the day, Sevene sithis (M. E.) 177 fn.
 In the evening 218.
 In the long ago 94.
 In the main 81, 82.
 In the meantime (meanwhile) 163 fn.
 In the morning 169, 243.
 in the world, How 185 fn.
 In time to seize 74.
 in won daye, Seven tymes 177 fn.
 In vain 82.
 in ye, 'Tis honourable 103 fn.
 inaccessible, The 78.
 inch, Every 170.
 Inch by inch 184.
 inch into futurity, Who can see an 160.
 inch longer, One 171 fn.
 inch of ground to stand upon, An 144.
 infamous, The 73.
 Infected city 334.
 Infirm of purpose 223.
 injustice, Doing her 280 fn.
 Inn it 271.
 innocent, An 84.
 Inseparables 84.
 Instant (=instantly) 201.
 Instant: For another ~ 168 fn.; This ~ 165.
 instant to be lost, There is not an 138.
 instant's delay, An 133.
 Instead of in that musty house 93 fn.
 Instead of walk 63 fn.
 Insure (d. v.) 281 fn.
 Insure you the victory 281 fn.
 Intend (d. v.) 284.
 Intended to publish 67 fn.

Invisibly: as Compl. 341.
 Invited them to fancy 313.
 Iron bars 104.
 Iron safe 122.
 Iron will 107.
 is, is, Whatever 6.
 is is in its causes just, Whatever 7.
 is, is right, Whatever 6.
 is no God, There 6.
 is no more, Troy 7.
 Is not far to seek 228 fn.
 Is not to compare 139.
 Is she mad to wander 227.
 Issue+Subj. Compl. 322.
 Issue victorious 322.
 ist zu, Die Tür (Germ.) 346 fn.
 It: as Cogn. Obj. 269-72.
 Italy's aggression 115.
 Item by item 183.
 It is an ill wind that blows nobody good 277 fn.
 It is I 35, 63.
 It is kind of you 35. See also 102 f.
 It is no joke talking 71.
 It is perfectly lovely the way you talk 113 fn.
 It never rains but it pours 9.
 It's got to be done 202.
 It's perfectly heartless your eating 67 fn.
 It seemed as if 20.
 It was, 'Lord, Mr. Henry' 99.
 It was no use asking 113 fn.
 It was not to be 358.
 It was rarely (seldom) 344 fn.
 It was told Sylvia 46 fn.
 Its whence 88.
 Its whither 88.
 itself, Constancy, Simplicity, etc., 133, 313, 316 fn., 317.

J

Jade's trick 123, 221 fn.
 Jolly glad 203.
 journeys, Going short 161.
 just, The 39, 80 fn., 257.
 justice, Do them 280 fn.
 Justify (*f. v.*) 362.
 Justify you traitors 362.

K

海岸を散歩する 162.
 籠を絶え 140 fn., 328 fn.
 Katrine's lake 126.
 河を渡る 247 fn.
 Kayat'sya (*Rus.*) 304 fn.
 Keep+Subj. Compl. 313, 322. See also under 'Kept.'
 Keep (*d. v.*) 284.
 Keep (*f. v.*) 49, 69, 364, 365. See also under 'Keeping,' and 'Kept.'
 Keep cool 322.
 Keep everything shipshape 365.
 Keep it a secret 364.
 Keep me awake 364.
 Keep you company 284.
 Keeping his affairs secret 69.
 Kent coal-mining 162 fn.
 kept a close prisoner, Be 334.
 Kept me waiting 365.
 Kept moving things 49.
 Kept perfectly still and quiet 313.
 kept secret, Be 51, 334.
 Kept silent 52 fn.
 Kept stirring 70.
 Kept the house empty 364.
 Kew Gardens 108.
 khorosho govorit po rusky, On (*Rus.*) 200 fn.
 関ゆ 328 fn.

killed, The 85.
 Killed himself 307.
 Kind (=kindly) 202.
 Kind as kind could be 101.
 Kind of you 35. See also 102 f.
 King Alfred 111.
 King of Persia's crown 127 fn.
 King's accommodation 120.
 King's College 116.
 King's ship 340.
 綺麗に忘れる 206 fn.
 切れる 330 fn.
 Kiss (*d. v.*) 266.
 Kissed good-night 267.
 kissed her good-bye, He 266.
 Kissed Margaret with a friendly kiss 268 fn.
 Knave's pate 197.
 Knave's trick 115.
 Knee-deep 176.
 kneeled them down, They 303.
 Knock (*f. v.*) 356.
 Knock me at this gate 197.
 Knocked him senseless 356.
 Know: without Obj. 32.
 Know (*f. v.*) 361.
 Know thee brave 361.
 know thee for my king, I 367.
 Know ye for certain 367.
 know you what you are, I 248.
 Known as 24.
 Known this young man his son 361.
 くへる 330 fn.
 Kyngys name of Englund, In the (*M. E.*) 127 fn.

L

Labouring day 147 fn.
 Labouring oar 147.
 Ladies' Home Journal 114.
 Lady doctor 107.

Lady's-maid 118.
 Læran (*O. E.*) 274 fn.
 laid bare, Was 334.
 lain him to die, He had 308 fn.
 Lame of his feet 223.
 Land agent 108.
 Language master 108.
 large, At 82, 83.
 Large of limbs 222.
 last, At 82, 126, 294, 303, 353, 357.
 Last: Breathed his ~; Looked my ~; Panted his ~ 261.
 Last any reasonable man his life 299 fn.
 Last autumn 226.
 Last evening 218.
 Last him a long time 299 fn.
 Last him long 299 fn.
 Last night 118, 199 fn.
 Last them the whole year 299.
 last thing, The 169.
 Last you a lifetime 196. See also 299 & fn.
 laste, Atte (*M. E.*) 82 fn.
 Lasting good 295.
 Lasting two days 210 fn.
 late, Of 221, 223.
 late years, Of 220.
 latest, At 83.
 laugh, Gave a short 244.
 Laugh a mechanical laugh 258 fn.
 Laugh thy girlish laughter 256 fn.
 Laughed a sharp laugh 39, 258 fn.
 Laughed one of his deep laughs 258 fn.
 Laughing expression 27 f.
 Lay (*d. v.*) 285.
 Lay (*f. v.*): with Adv. as Compl. 378 fn.
 lay for noontide solace, Reclined he 108.
 lay the untrodden snow, All blood-

less 311.
 Lay a hopeless encumbrance 323.
 Lay to your fingers 378 fn.
 Lays you plots 285.
 Lead (*d. v.*) 285 & fn. See also under 'Led.'
 Lead the bride a dance 285 fn.
 leads him, What a life his wife 285.
 Leads thee a dog's life of it 285 fn.
 Learn (=teach) 274 fn.
 Learning, Man of his 124.
 least, At 82, 156, 190, etc.
 Least possible delay 27.
 Leastways 193.
 Leave (*d. v.*) 285. See also under 'Leaving' and 'Left.'
 Leave (*f. v.*) 55, 217, 236, 365; with Adv. as Compl. 375, 377. See also under 'Leaving,' 'Left,' etc.
 Leave any stone unturned 365.
 Leave the engines alone 377.
 Leave the right to pursue the expedient 73.
 Leave you poorly off 377.
 Leaves the door ajar 377.
 Leaving her far too much money 285.
 Leaving the dry, grey soil bare 55.
 Leaving them sleeping 217.
 Leaving us naked 365.
 Lecture-hall 105.
 Led that boy a dog's life 285 fn.
 left an orphan, Was 335.
 left bare, Was 314.
 Left him for dead 82 fn.
 left open, Was 335.
 Left their city unfortified 236.
 Left us this our spirit entire 365.
 left vacant, Was 95.
 Lend (*d. v.*) 61, 285.
 Lend them my assistance 285.
 length, In 132.

- length of the room, Running the 160.
 length of time, Any 166.
 Leofodan heora lif (*O. E.*) 269 fn.
 Leornian (*O. E.*) 274 fn.
 Leornung-cniht (*O. E.*) 106 fn.
 less, None the 188.
 leste, Atte (*M. E.*) 82 fn.
 Let (*simple tr.*) 43.
 Let (*f. v.*): with Infinitive as Compl. 71, 118, 119, 126, 143, 219 fn., 253 fn., 262, 320 fn., 324, 371.
 Let+Obj.+Dative Infinitive 373 fn.
 Let him marry 371.
 Let him sleep, will not let their tongues to cease 373 fn.
 Let my legs drop 371.
 Let's home to supper 30 fn.
 Let the door swing to 346 fn.
 let them alone, To 98.
 let to grow, Were 372.
 Lethe lake 63 fn.
 Lie+Subj. Compl. 108, 311, 323.
 See also under 'Lay.'
 lie thick and sodden, The brown leaves 323.
 Lies him down 303. See also under 'Lain.'
 Life cannot be lived 41.
 Life-long trouble 80.
 Life-size image 110.
 Life's labor 174 fn.
 Life's long battle 115 fn.
 life-time, Wait a 163.
 lifetime, Last you a 196. See also 299 & fn.
 Light (=lightly) 207.
 Like(d): ~ to hear her sing 369; I should ~ to make 203 fn.; ~ to run 96; Louis would ~ to see 38; ~ to sing 96.
 like, Most 211.
 like(ly) as not, As 211 fn.
 Like enough 211.
 Like meets with like 81.
 like of these, The 136.
 like to have been staved, We were 66.
 Like us: ~ both to go 210 fn.; ~ to give 118.
 likely, Most 211 fn.
 Likely to be 344.
 Limb from limb 183.
 limbs, Large of 222.
 Lincoln's Inn 116.
 Linden's hills 126.
 linen, Of pure white 136.
 lion's shadow, A 144.
 Live+Subj. Compl. 309 fn., 311, 320 fn., 323, 343 fn.
 Live a burden to the earth 309 fn.
 Live a life of a dog 39.
 Live chance's fool 323.
 Live fools 311.
 Live her own life 258 fn.
 Live his (life) 258 fn.
 live to repent, You will 225.
 Live your life 258 fn.
 Live single 320 fn.
 live to repent it, You will 225.
 Lived a life 256.
 Lived an honest man 320 fn.
 Lived and died as men 339.
 Lived nameless 323.
 lived right in the midst of the natives, A kind Englishman 155.
 Lived the life a recluse 258 fn.
 lives a burden to the earth, Many a man 309 fn.
 lving, The 80 fn., 86.
 Living an outdoor life 258 fn.
 Living close 206 fn.
 Living house 145.
 Living soul 230.

- locking-up the spirits, The 67 fn.
 Locked herself 307.
 London hospitals 109.
 London lane 25.
 London suburbs 73.
 Long: Before ~, For ~ 89; For so ~ 276 fn.
 Long: All day ~; The day ~ 170.
 long ago, In the 94.
 Long-ago times 157.
 long and short of it, The 79.
 long she (I) had to live, How 91.
 long shall I give you, How 91.
 long sight-worse, A 172.
 long to wait, Had not very 91.
 Longer by one inch 171 fn.
 Look+Subj. Compl. 33, 310, 318 fn., 323 & fn., 349 fn.; with Adv. as Compl. 341, 342, 348, 349.
 Look a scoundrel 323.
 Look angrily 341.
 Look at this place, how it's torn in two 249 fn.
 Look fresh and merrily 341.
 Look it in the face 298 fn.
 Look not a gift horse in the mouth 298 fn.
 Look promising 323 fn.
 Look rarely 348.
 Look sharp 208.
 Look shockingly 342.
 Look splendid 349 fn.
 Look to be 338 fn.
 Look your best 261.
 Looked a statue of anger 323 fn.
 Looked closely 206 fn.
 Looked defiance and distrust 265.
 Looked her thanks 266.
 Looked delicate 310.
 Looked inquiry 265.
 Looked my last 261.
 Looked my perplexity (surprise) 265.
 Looked not unfavourably 349.
 Looked puzzled 318 fn.
 Looked question 265.
 Looked straight 208, 210 fn.
 Looked the perfection of health 323 fn.
 Looked to be a lad 338 fn.
 looking about me, I... 308 fn.
 Looking daggers 265 fn.
 Looking her farewell 266.
 looking out for her, Accustomed to 71.
 Looks sadly 348.
 Looks splendidly 349.
 Looping the loop 251.
 Lord Brooke's calibre, A man of 117.
 Lord it 271.
 Los hijos aman á la madre (*Sp.*) 200 fn.
 Lose (*d. v.*) 285. See also under 'Lost.'
 loss to know, At a 236.
 Lost: as Subj. Compl. 97.
 Lost dog 152.
 Lost him the regard 285.
 Lost man (woman) 151 fn.
 lost us the best place, You've 198.
 loth to be rid, Nothing 189.
 Loudest: Calling its ~ 253; Pray your very ~ 255; Roar their ~ 262.
 Love to see 64.
 Loved to drink (see) 357.
 Loveland's wrath 165 fn.
 Lucius' banishment 340.
 luxurious, The 80 fn.
 Lych-gate 371.
 M
 町を行く 162.
 made a fellow of Oriel, Been 331.

- made a noble knight, He would have 52.
 Made a sailor tell 371.
 Made her a bow-pot 52.
 Made him no answer 285 fn.
 Made his cheeks to burn 372 fn.
 Made it to hang 373.
 Made itself heard 353.
 Made Keola welcome 285 fn.
 Made me a maniac 353.
 Made me welcome 101.
 Made much of 19.
 made official, Was 331.
 Made one of the 'young ones' 220.
 Made the breeze to blow 373.
 Made the captain a very low bow 285 fn.
 Made the earth to tremble 372 fn.
 Made themselves manifest 353.
 Made the ship to go 372 fn.
 made to suffer, Were 372.
 Made up my mind to foot it 271.
 Madison Square Garden 108.
 Maid-ervant 107.
 main, In the 81, 82.
 Major Waring 153.
 Make (*intr.*) 51.
 Make + Subj. Compl. 52, 220, 315.
 Make (*simple tr.*) 37, 52, 104, 135.
 Make (*d. v.*) 52, 101, 285 & fn., 286 & fn.
 Make (*f. v.*) 47, 48, 52, 65, 67 fn., 69, 103, 132, 151, 187, 223, 252, 351, 353, 354 & fn., 356 fn.; with Infinitive as Compl. 227, 371, 372 fn.; with Adv. as Compl. 374, 375, 376 fn.
 Make + Obj. + Dative Infinitive 80 fn., 372 fn., 373.
 Make a brilliant scholar 315.
 Make an American girl a good husband 286.
 Make an officer 323.
 Make friends 224.
 Make her Prime Minister 354 fn.
 Make him a very proper wife 52.
 Make it London 353.
 Make it swell 372 fn.
 Make me a great deal of money 285.
 Make me ashamed 354.
 Make some arrangements to throw her out 128 fn.
 Make that speech hers 353.
 Make the mind of man to swell 372 fn.
 Make thee mad 356 fn.
 Make you a good husband 286 fn.
 Make you a Viscount 354 fn.
 Make you more amiably 342 fn., 375.
 Make your tender heart easy 353.
 Make yourself comfortable 353.
 Makes it all the more interesting 52.
 Makes me very nervous and poorly 353.
 Makes people unwell 354.
 makes the mare to go, Money 372 fn.
 Makes (them) very ill-favouredly 374.
 Making me a sign to step into it 285 fn.
 Man-about-town 134 fn.
 Man below 158.
 Man of energy 18.
 Man of his Learning 124.
 Man of Lord Brooke's calibre 117.
 Man of virtue 54, 134.
 Man to man 183.
 Man's estate 88.
 Man's religion 128.
 man's sleep, An old 112.
 Manchet bread 84.

- Manhood suffrage 107.
 Manor-house 139.
 Many a time and oft 168.
 many shades, Intenser by 171 fn.
 Many sizes smaller 172.
 Many ways 179.
 March sun, The 105.
 March winds 190.
 market-day, The last 164.
 'Marry' is the very theme 99.
 Marshal Grouchy 123.
 marvellous, The 73.
 Marvellous calm and composed 201.
 Marvellously changed 201 fn.
 Master's thigh 263.
 mate Bill, My 158, 211 fn.
 material, (The dress) was a rich 130 fn.
 matter, What do they 186 fn.
 matter a horse-radish, Doesn't 175.
 Matter of importance 134.
 May flowers 190.
 Me: as Dat. Int. 196, 197; as Eth. Dat. 197, 198.
 me faites-vous là, Que (*Fr.*) 199 fn.
 Me han muerto á mi hijo (*Sp.*) 199 fn.
 Mean (*d. v.*) 286.
 Meant no one any harm 286.
 meantime, (In the) 163 fn.
 meanwhile, (In the) 163 fn.
 Meet + Subj. Compl. 324.
 meet the best friends, They would be sure to 324.
 Men of his years 117.
 Men's Bible-Class 105.
 Men's reports 367 fn.
 Merchant ships 227.
 mercy's sake, For 115, 125.
 Mete (*d. v.*) 286.
 mete me, The measure you were going to 286.
 Miclum gefeohtum feaht (*O. E.*) 269 fn.
 middle, The 77 fn., 210.
 mien, Grim of 223.
 Might and main 181.
 might and main, With 181 fn.
 Mighti meke (*M. E.*) 204 fn.
 Mightily behind 204 fn.
 Mighty dangerous 204 fn.
 Mighty fine 204.
 Mighty of heart (mind) 223.
 mihi Celsus agit, Quid (*L.*) 199 fn.
 mile, I walked near a 160.
 miles away, Wish him 377.
 miles' distance, Three 121.
 Miller's only son 111.
 mind, A dead man out of 135.
 mind, Mighty of 223.
 mind, Of one 136.
 mind lifting the kettle off, Would you 315.
 Mind my saying 68.
 Mind's eye 122 fn.
 Mind's peace 122 fn.
 minute longer, A 171.
 minute or two, A 165.
 Minutes: Several ~ 165; Twenty ~ 54.
 mir nicht so finster aus, Sieh (*Germ.*) 199 fn.
 mischief, Do himself some 280 fn.
 Miss Sedley's departure 119.
 Mistaken idea 55, 57.
 Mr. Dimmock's remains 118.
 Mr. Doughty's famous trial 120.
 Mr. Hoggin's skill 119.
 Mr. Utterson the lawyer 54.
 見 328 fn.
 Mocking smile 255.
 Moment: A ~ 165, 193; Every ~ 165.
 moment to lose, We have not a 138.

moment's notice, A 115.
 moment's respite, Another 121.
 Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays 195 fn.
 Money makes the mare to go 372 fn.
 Money to get back my health 284.
 Monstrous fine 204.
 month, A 166.
 months afterwards, Two 51.
 Montparnasse quarter 212 fn.
 Morbid of you 102.
 More closely 214 fn.
 more interesting, All the 52.
 more to be said, There is no 138.
 more to say, I have much 50.
 more to say, There is no 138.
 Morning: At ~ 217; Each ~ 89;
 In the ~ 169, 243; Of a ~ 218; Of
 an early ~ 219 fn.; This ~ 164.
 Morning and evening 162.
 Morning prayer 108.
 Morning superintendent 105.
 Mornings 194 fn.
 Morocco case 69.
 Moss rose 107.
 Most like(ly) 211 & fn.
 Mother earth 108.
 Mother's breast 206 fn.
 Mother's fetching 141.
 Moulton's duty 66 fn.
 Mountain scenery 108.
 Mountains high 178.
 mourning, The 86.
 Mouth-organ 110.
 moved, Not a move he's 256.
 much more to say, I have 50.
 Much to learn 141.
 Much to read and think of 221.
 much to think of, He found 221.
 much wrong'd, Give him 367 fn.
 Muffled reverberation 317 fn.
 Music lessons 283.

Musk-rose 213.
 must after him, I 294.
 Mustard seed 108.
 must to Coventry, I 30 fn.
 musty, The room smelt 329 fn.
 My dear 226.
 My dears 84.
 my leave, I take 119.
 My letter 114 fn.
 My mate Bill 158, 211 fn.
 my own size, One 132 fn.
 my own ways, Go 254.
 My punishment 120.
 my ways, Go 193.
 My wife and children's ghosts 127 fn.

N

Name no name 250 fn.
 named George, Was 338.
 Named the name 251.
 nation of men's, A 128.
 Nation's legend 94.
 nature, He is a shallow 131.
 nature, She is of a quiet 131 fn.
 nay, Say him (thee) 292 fn.
 necessity, Of 221 & fn.
 Ned (O. E.) 191.
 need I fear, What 186.
 Needs 191, 318.
 Needs will (would) 191 fn.
 neighed, Furious every charger 343 fn.
 Neighbour wood 106 fn.
 Neither...nor 58.
 Neptune's ocean 206 fn.
 never rains but it pours, It 9.
 new, The 78.
 New-born day 213 fn.
 New-born pleasure 213 fn.
 New-fallen snow 213 fn.
 New-found art 139.

New-made hay 213.
 New-washed 213 fn.
 New Year's Day, Every 126.
 Newly-arrived pint 213 fn.
 Newly-awakened surprise 213 fn.
 Newly opened 'autostrada' 213 fn.
 Newly-painted signboard 213 fn.
 Next season 166.
 Next the door 37.
 next time, The 168 fn.
 Nice of you 102.
 Nickname (f. v.) 358.
 nicknamed the beast, Me they 358.
 Nred (O. E.) 191.
 Niggard of your speech 55.
 Night: All ~ 162, 167, 346 fn.; Last ~ 118, 199 fn.; Of a dark ~ 219 & fn.; Of a Saturday ~ 219; Of the ~ 220; On a dark ~ 219 fn.; Saturday ~ 108, 165; The ~ 167.
 Night, morning and noon 167.
 Night and day 167 fn.
 Night thoughts 108.
 night without a star, A 135.
 Nights 194 & fn.
 Nights: A' ~; O' ~ 220 fn.; Of ~ 220.
 Nimium felix (L.) 209 fn.
 鷄 107 fn.
 No: Etymology of 188 fn.
 no buts, But me 10, 103.
 no choice but, I had 65.
 no denying, There was 68.
 No doubt 62, 69, 186.
 No easy matter to find 228 fn.
 No end 162 fn.
 no going fast, There is 69.
 no grace, Grace me 297.
 No horse to ride on 271.
 no joke taking, It is 71.
 No longer 22, 228.
 no more to be said, There is 138.

no more to say, There is 133.
 No nearer 188.
 no objection to receive me, If you should have 289.
 no one to advise her, She had 143.
 no place to bring children to, This is 144.
 no pleasing you, There's 61.
 no prouds, Proud me 103, 297.
 No question 185.
 no room to do them justice, I have 280 fn.
 no telling their origin, There was 68.
 no thankings, Thank me 103, 297.
 no time to talk, I had 144.
 no uncle, Uncle me 297.
 No use: It is ~ 129; A Bible was ~ 131; A gun was of ~ 136. See also 113 fn.
 no use asking, It was 113 fn.
 No whit superior 172.
 no women to lord it over me, I would have 271.
 Nobles 85.
 nobody left to care for, I shall have 363.
 Nod my assent 266.
 Nodded a grave assent 266.
 Nodded a listless approval 266.
 Nodded a yes 266 fn.
 Nodded her comprehension 266.
 Nominate (f. v.) 358.
 飲める 331 fn.
 nominate 'the lower creation,' Whom we are pleased to 358.
 None so bad 188.
 None the less 188.
 None the worse 187.
 None too hopeful 188.
 nonsense you talk, What 37.
 Noontide solace 108.

Norfolk plover 90.
 normal, Far from 100.
 Not: Etymology of 171 fn.
 not a moment to lose, We have 138.
 Not a whit better 171.
 not an instant to be lost, There is 138.
 Not-at-homes 92 fn.
 Not far to seek 228 fn.
 Not only...but (also) 58.
 not unfavourably, Looked 349.
 Nothing: Avail ~ 187 fn.; Care ~ 187.
 Nothing daunted 189.
 nothing for it but, There was 63.
 Nothing jealous 103.
 Nothing loth 189.
 Nothing resembled 187.
 nothing to fear, There is 259 fn.
 nothing to say, (He) would have 282.
 nouveau-née, Une fille (*Fr.*) 200 fn.
 now, Before 90.
 Now a dayes (*M. E.*) 195 fn.
 Nowadays 195 fn.
 Nowadays 101, 132, 141, 192, 195.
 Noways 193.
 Nowhere: as Noun Equiv. 89, 219 fn.
 Numbing wonder 87 fn.
 out, Doesn't value a rotten 175.

O

O' nights 220 fn.
 O' Sundays 220 fn.
 Obey: Case after 247 fn.
 Obey, obey, is the first word 100.
 Obey the summons 246.
 Obey to Vandermast 247 fn.
 objection to receive me, If you should have no 289.
 Obligated to tell 59.
 Observe (*f. v.*): with Infinitive as

Compl. 370; with Dative Infinitive 373 fn.
 Observe such men to retain 373 fn.
 observed leave, Bitton he had 370.
 Obstacle to surmount 142.
 Obtain (*d. v.*) 286.
 Obtained him liberty 286.
 obvious, The 78.
 Occasion (*d. v.*) 286.
 Occasioned the priest much serious reflection 286.
 oddly, Read 350 fn.
 O'er: as Compl. 119.
 O'erleaps itself 306 fn.
 Of (=in respect of) 222 f.
 of accomplishment, Easy 223.
 Of a certainty 222.
 Of a dark night 219 & fn.
 Of a morning 218.
 of a quiet nature, She is 131 fn.
 Of a Saturday night 219.
 Of a sudden 222.
 Of a Sunday 219.
 Of a surety 221.
 Of a truth 222.
 Of age: Coming ~ 136; Five years ~ 173; Thrifty year ~ (*M. E.*) 129 fn.
 Of an afternoon 218, 219 fn.
 Of an early morning 219 fn.
 Of an evening 219.
 of any service, Be 134.
 of care, This world 134.
 of complexion, Pale 222.
 Of course 204 fn., 222 fn.
 of course, Things 135.
 of eighteen, Daughter 86.
 of energy, Man 18.
 Of evenings 220.
 Of excessive fineness 136.
 of feature, Severe 223.
 Of force 221.

Of gold: Crown ~ 135; Helmet ~ 130 fn.
 of great importance, Individuals 238.
 of hand, Heavy 223.
 of hand to mouth, Lives 134.
 Of healthy brown colour 130 fn.
 of hearing, Hard 34, 223.
 of heart, Mighty 223.
 of heavenly birth, Deem'd 61.
 of his feet, Lame 223.
 of his Learning, Man 124.
 Of his own accord 218.
 of his own age, A boy 132 fn.
 of his years, Men 117.
 of importance, Matter 134.
 Of late 221, 223.
 Of late years 220.
 of limbs, Large 222.
 of Lord Brooke's calibre, Man 117.
 of mien, Grim 223.
 of mind, Mighty 223.
 Of necessity 221 & fn.
 Of nights 220.
 Of no use 136.
 Of old 221 & fn.
 of old, From 94.
 Of old days (*adv.*) 220.
 of one eye, Blind 222.
 Of one mind 136.
 Of pure white linen 136.
 of purpose, Infirm 223.
 Of smooth stone 135.
 Of somewhere else 90.
 of speech, Coy 223.
 of spirit, Fresh 222.
 of stature, Short 222.
 Of stature tall 222.
 of stone, Heart 135.
 Of Sunday 219 fn.
 of the air, Fowls 134.
 of the earth, Wild beasts 134.
 Of the night (*adv.*) 220 fn.

Of the same opinion 136.
 Of the summe evenings 219 fn.
 of these, The like 136.
 Of vast extent 136.
 of virtue, Man 54, 134.
 of vital importance, Prove to be 338 fn.
 of voice, Bold 223.
 Of yore 221 fn.
 of you (him, etc.), Kind, Unkind, etc. 35 & fn., 102 f.
 of your size, A kid 132 fn.
 of your speech, Niggard 55.
 Off: as Obj. Compl. 378; as Subj. Compl. 346.
 Off: Badly ~ 346; Poorly ~ 377; Well ~ 346.
 Off-hand fashion 157.
 Offer (*d. v.*) 42, 286.
 offered, I've been 46.
 offered me, No adequate reason has been 46.
 Old: Sixteen years ~ 170; Some years ~ 214.
 old, Of 221 & fn.
 old, The 72, 319 fn.
 old days, Of 220.
 Old-fashioned enough to drink 218.
 old sake's sake, For 125.
 older, Any the 187.
 olds, Two-year- 84.
 Olive grove 107.
 On a dark night 219 fn.
 On all-fours 51.
 On a Sunday 219 fn.
 On board the yacht 20, 53.
 On char (*M. E.*) 347 fn.
 On cierge (*O. E.*) 347 fn.
 on dæg, Seofon siðum (*O. E.*) 177 fn.
 on earth, What 185 fn.
 On edge 136.
 On high 226.

on high, From 93.
 On khorosho govorit po rusky
 (*Rus.*) 200 fn.
 On lyve (*M. E.*) 347 fn.
 On sleep 347 fn.
 On the quiet 81, 82.
 On the right 81.
 On the sly 81, 82.
 On the whole 57, 81, 82, 349.
 On this Side the Grave 19.
 On your way home 158.
 Once 196.
 One and all 191, 238.
 One by one 191, 314.
 One day: (of future time) 162; (of
 past time) 164, 308 fn.
 One evening 133.
 One Hundred Years' War, The 115.
 One inch longer 171 fn.
 one mind, Of 136.
 One more to fetch 141.
 One of 'em's features 128.
 one to advise her, She had no 143.
 one wink, Could not sleep 269 fn.
 One way and...the other 165 fn.
 Only to find 18, 226.
 Only to return 234.
 Ons (=once) 196 fn.
 opinion, Of the same 136.
 Opportunity: Another ~ 169 fn.;
 The first ~ 169.
 oppressed, The 85.
 Or: Etymology of 59 fn.
 Order (*d. v.*) 286.
 ordinary, Out of the 81.
 Othergates 192.
 Ošer weg (*O. E.*) 192.
 Otherwise: as Compl. 378.
 otherwise, Wish it 378.
 Ošres wæges (*O. E.*) 192.
 Otter fashion 180.
 Our country's honour 116.

Our fatigues forgotten 240.
 Our Soverayn Lord the Kyngys
 wyll (*M. E.*) 127 fn.
 Out: as Obj. Compl. 378; as Subj.
 Compl. 345 & fn.
 out, All 's 345.
 out, Want the whole thing 378.
 Out of harm's way 115, 126.
 Out of mind: A dead man ~ 135;
 Time ~ 135 fn., 164.
 Out of the blue 76 fn.
 Out of the common 81, 82.
 Out of the common way 82 fn.
 Out of the ordinary (usual) 81.
 Out-spoken Susie 151 fn.
 Over: as Obj. Compl. 378; as Subj.
 Compl. 157 fn., 187, 345, 355. See
 also under 'O'er'.
 over, His wars were 345.
 over, Wanted it 378.
 over age, Years 173.
 Over and above 41.
 Overdo 306 fn.
 Overdone himself 306.
 Overdrink oneself 307.
 Overeat oneself 307.
 Overhead wires 157.
 Overhear (*f. v.*): with Infinitive as
 Compl. 340, 369.
 Overheard him say 369.
 Over-heard them say 340.
 Overreach thyself 303.
 Overshot thyself 307.
 Oversleep oneself 307.
 Over the tea-cups 32.
 Overwalk herself 199, 307.
 Overwork oneself 307.
 Owe (*d. v.*) 43, 287 & fn.
 Owe you an apology 287 fn.
 Owe you every excuse 287.
 Owed him twopence 287 fn.
 owed you, What he 43.

owes me, How much money he
 287 fn.
 Own (*f. v.*) 361.
 Owing thyself a woman 361.
 Oxford Road (Street) 108.

P

Pace for pace 206.
 Packing-cases 90.
 Paid dependent 150.
 pained to watch, Harry's heart was
 235.
 pains to relate, He took the 290.
 Pale of complexion 222.
 Panted his last 261.
 Park Lane 108.
 Park Lane days 84.
 Pardon (*d. v.*) 287.
 Pardon thee thy life 287.
 Part+Subj. Compl. 324.
 Part: Play a ~; Play our ~ 259 fn.;
 Play your ~ 119.
 part good friends, Let 's 324.
 Part in words, part in signs 189 fn.
 particular, In 82.
 Parting day 147.
 Parting gift 149.
 Parting glare of indignation 150.
 parts, Acted both 259.
 parts drunk, Three 231.
 parts sunk, Three 170.
 Pass (*d. v.*) 287 & fn.
 Pass my daughter a sufficient dower
 287.
 Passed clean out of Jordan 209 fn.
 Passing rich 177, 215.
 Pay (*d. v.*) 121, 287.
 Pawn (Quasi-Passive) 140 fn.
 Peer's daughter 170.
 Perceive (*f. v.*): with Infinitive as
 Compl.; with Dative Infinitive
 373 fn.
 Perceived himself to be known
 273 fn.
 Perceived the dogs and horsemen
 come 373 fn.
 performing of it, The true 66 fn.
 Perhaps 56, 166, 209, etc.
 perjured, The 85.
 Permit me to return 292.
 Persuade: ~ her to spend 231; ~
 them to buy 253.
 Peterborough way 109, 161.
 petrified, Stood 318 fn.
 Pick (*d. v.*) 287.
 Picture-book 21.
 picture of consternation, Started
 back a 312.
 picturesque, The 73.
 Picturesque it 270.
 Pinch his arms black and blue
 351 fn.
 Place to bring children to 144.
 Plain (=plainly) 207.
 Plain-spoken 152.
 plaster-of-Paris, The trout was 130.
 Play (*d. v.*) 287.
 Play a part 259 fn.
 Play a sorry farce 255.
 Play any man a trick 287.
 Play fair 207 fn.
 Play our part 259 fn.
 Play the woman 259 fn.
 Play your best 255.
 Play your part 119.
 Played a game 255.
 Played me false 207.
 playful, The reverse of 100.
 Playing its fantastic sports 254.
 Playing the lunatic 251.
 Pleasant to look upon 237.
 Pleasantest way imaginable 32.
 pleasing you, There 's no 61.

plucked me ope his doublet, He 197.
 Pocket manicure set 110.
 Poets (duly qualified) 151.
 Polished societies 366.
 Policeman 345 fn.
 poor, The 72, 80 fn.
 Poorly; as Obj. Compl. 353; as Subj. Compl. 344.
 Poorly off 377.
 Poorly people 344.
 pounds' weight, Ten 115.
 Pour (*d. v.*) 287.
 power to tear him, Would have 183.
 Pray your very loudest 255.
 Prayed a prayer 257 fn.
 Preach (*d. v.*) 288.
 Préach Richard a lesson 288.
 Precious few 204 fn.
 Precious large 204 fn.
 Precious little 204 fn.
 Precious quick 204.
 Preciously welcome 204 fn.
 Prepare (*d. v.*) 288.
 Prepare you a coffin 288.
 Presage (*d. v.*) 211.
 Prescribe (*d. v.*) 288.
 Prescribe not us our duties 288.
 Present (*d. v.*) 288.
 Presented him a kingly crown 288.
 preserved unaltered, Be 335.
 pressed close, Have been 206 fn.
 presumed innocent, Is 335.
 Pretty good 202 fn.
 Pretty spoken girl 151 fn.
 Prevent (*d. v.*) 288.
 Prevented me that trouble 288.
 price are those articles, What 131.
 Pride oneself 163 fn., 305 & fn.
 Prince it 270.
 Printed matter 150.
 Privileged to enter 239 fn.
 Probably 57, 93 fn.

Proclaim (*f. v.*) 352.
 Proclaimed the island a single territory 352.
 Procure (*d. v.*) 288 & fn.
 Procures him a degree of respect 288 fn.
 Produce (*d. v.*) 288.
 Produces me a good fifteen hundred a year 288.
 Proffer (*d. v.*) 289.
 Proffering him this promised help 289.
 Prohibit (*d. v.*) 289.
 Promise+Subj. Compl. 117, 324.
 Promise her protection 289.
 Promise me never to be 300.
 Promise to sit 116.
 Promise you to do 283 fn.
 Promised me my life 289 fn.
 promises a task, (It) 324.
 Prompts them to prince it 270.
 pronounced a tremendous fellow, Was 335.
 Propose (*d. v.*) 289.
 Propose myself the satisfaction 289.
 Prose it 270.
 Proud me no prouds 103, 297.
 proud to have you read it, I 'll be 371.
 Prove (*f. v.*) 362.
 Prove+Subj. Compl. 324, 335 fn., 344 fn.
 Prove a way 324.
 Prove to be 338 & fn.
 Prove to be of vital importance 338 fn.
 Prove true 335 fn.
 proved guilty, Is 335.
 Proved herself too quick 362.
 Proved my prophecy incorrect 362.
 Proved to be exceeding high 338.
 Proved to be expensive 338 fn.

proved utterly unequal to their task, They 324.
 Provide (*d. v.*) 289.
 Provide me conveyance 289.
 Pub. it 271.
 Publishing season 226.
 Pull (*f. v.*): with Adv. as Compl. 378.
 pulled green, Are 335.
 pulled my ears for me, (He) 199 fn.
 Pulled the door to 378.
 purpose, Infirm of 223.
 Push (*d. v.*) 289.
 Push (*f. v.*) 356 fn.
 Pushed open a door 356 fn.
 Put (*f. v.*): with Adv. as Compl. 378 fn.
 put out apprentices, Are 336.
 put to more strength, He 378 fn.

Q

Queen Herodias 112.
 Queen it 270.
 Queen's College 116.
 Queer couple to behold 228 fn.
 Que me faites-vous là (*Fr.*) 199 fn.
 question, No 185.
 Questionless 211.
 Quick (=quickly) 201, 207.
 quick, Stung to the 75.
 quick and the dead, The 86 fn.
 Quick as thought 207.
 quick o' the ulcer, To the 75 fn.
 Quick-following peal of thunder 213 fn.
 Quick-moving eyes 213.
 Quicker (=more quickly) 229.
 Quickly: as Subj. Compl. 349.
 Quid mihi Celsus agit (*L.*) 199 fn.
 quiet, On the 81, 82.
 quiet, The 73, 319 fn.

Quite a while 163.
 quite recently, Till 99.
 Quote (*d. v.*) 289.
 Quote me pages 289.

R

Race: Ran a hard ~ 39; Ran his godly ~ 260.
 Radio set 108.
 rag to wear, I haven't a 140.
 Rain cats and dogs 268.
 Raining greyly 343 fn.
 Raise (*d. v.*) 290 & fn.
 Raise me two thousand five hundred dollars 290 fn.
 Raise you trouble 290.
 Ran a hard race 39.
 Ran his fastest 262.
 Ran his godly race 260.
 Ran its course 260.
 ran red, The little brook that 86.
 Ran slower 214.
 Rang clear 325 fn.
 Rang true 325.
 Rank higher 214.
 Rap 'me well 197.
 rarely, It was 344 fn.
 rarely, Look 348.
 Reach (*d. v.*) 290 & fn.
 Reach me a candle 290.
 Read (*d. v.*) 290 & fn.
 Read (Quasi-Passive) 330 & fn.
 read, Well-. Ill-, etc. 151 fn., 152.
 Read free and easy 330 fn.
 Read funny 330 fn.
 Read me a riddle 290 fn.
 Read oddly 350 fn.
 Read the riddle 250 fn.
 Read true 330.
 Read us the poems 290.
 Readie twice to fall 196 fn.

reading, Careful 66 fn.
 reading, Fond of 67 fn.
 Reading carefully 66 fn.
 Reading history 66 fn.
 reading of history, The 66 fn.
 Reading-room 312.
 Ready: ~ to attend 236; ~ to eat 228; ~ to go 58; ~ to lend 285.
 Ready-made 212 fn.
 received a welcome guest, Was 336.
 reckoned one of the handsomest women, Was 336.
 reckoned well-built, Is 336.
 Reclined he lay for noontide solace 108.
 Recommend (*d. v.*) 290 & fn.
 Reflected rays 26.
 reflected redly, We e 343 fn.
 Refuse (*d. v.*) 290.
 Refuse him a bed 290.
 Regent's Park 116.
 Relate (*d. v.*) 290.
 relief, Sighed a 267.
 Re-live their lives 258.
 Remain+Subj. Compl. 283, 317, 318 & fn.
 Remain an optimist 317.
 Remain(ed) silent 318 & fn.
 Remain unmarried 283.
 Remained to pray 225.
 Remains suspended 318 fn.
 Remember (*f. v.*) 361, 362.
 Remember him a little boy 361.
 Remember her speaking 362.
 Remember Mary Box, how she was always thumping Louisa 248 fn.
 Remember the two Miss Scratcheys, how they used to fight 248 fn.
 Remembered her speaking 362.
 Remit (*d. v.*) 291.
 Remitting her money 291.
 Render (*d. v.*) 291 & fn.

Render (*f. v.*) 354.
 Render this opinion untenable 354.
 rendered me, The service you have 291.
 Repay (*d. v.*) 291.
 repealing of my banish'd brother, The 66 fn.
 repent me, I 304.
 reported fit for duty, Was 51.
 Represents a promise 247 fn.
 reputed for a prince, Was 339.
 reputed the best, Was 336.
 reputed the greatest empire, Is 336.
 reputed to be healthy, Was 338.
 Reputed wizard's death 320.
 Request (*d. v.*) 291.
 Rescue: Her ~ 120 fn.; The boy's ~ 115.
 Resemble: Case after 247 fn.
 Resemble to that 247 fn.
 Resembled my father 245.
 Reserve (*d. v.*) 291 & fn.
 Reserve me a seat 291.
 Resign (*d. v.*) 291.
 Resign her mine 291.
 Resting, Sat 148, 325.
 Restore (*d. v.*) 291 & fn.
 Restore a parent his child 291.
 Retired artist 154 fn.
 Retired Indian officer 153.
 Return (*d. v.*) 292.
 Return+Subj. Compl. 324.
 Return you your purse 292.
 returned, Her sister just 155.
 returned home satisfied, I 324.
 Returned traveller 153.
 Returning sun 142.
 reverse of playful, The 100.
 Revisit the earth to punish the perjured 85.
 rich, The 72, 80 fn.; treated as Singular 71 fn.

Rich and poor 81.
 Richly: as Subj. Compl. 340.
 Richmond Park 108.
 Riding-habit 145.
 Right (=rightly) 208 & fn.; as Intensive 199, 203 & fn., 210 & fn.
 right, On the 81.
 right, The 73.
 right, To the 81, 304 fn.
 Right across the lift 210 fn.
 Right early 203 fn.
 Right Honourable 203 fn.
 Right in the middle of the country 210.
 Right in the midst of the natives 155.
 Right nimbly 203 fn.
 Right out of the room 210 fn.
 Right Reverend 203 fn.
 Right round to the entrance 210 fn.
 Right sickly 203.
 Right speedily 199.
 right thing to do, The only 138 fn.
 Right-valiant Banquo 203 fn.
 Right well 203 fn.
 Right Worshipful 203 fn.
 Rightly 208 fn.
 Ring+Subj. Compl. 325 & fn. See also under 'Rang.'
 Ringing the cheerful peal 260.
 Ripping good testimonial 215.
 Risen sun 153.
 Risk: Run any ~ 260 fn.; Run the ~ 260.
 Ritt er euch unter des Feuers Blitzen (*Germ.*) 199 fn.
 River bed 108.
 river Thames, The 111.
 road, To come so lonely a 160.
 Roaming clean through the bounds of Asia 209 fn.
 Roar their loudest 262.

Roar you as gently 199.
 Româns' hands 371.
 Room and to spare 141 f.
 room to do them justice, I have no 280 fn.
 Rose-bed 178.
 Rough and smooth 80.
 Rough it 272.
 rough, rude, and wildly, Demeaned himself 341 fn.
 Roughly-cut faces 212 fn.
 round the tree, From 92.
 Rubber shoes 107.
 Rude-carved crosses 212.
 ruined my life for me, You 199 fn.
 Run (*tr.*) 38.
 Run+Subj. Compl. 86, 316, 325 & fn. See also under 'Ran' and 'Running.'
 Run any risk 260 fn.
 Run fast 201.
 Run fat 325.
 Run ourselves aground 305 fn.
 Run riot 325 fn.
 Run strong 325.
 Run the risk 260.
 Run the wild-goose chase 260 fn.
 Running short 316.
 Running water 329 fn.

S

S'absenter (*de*) (*Fr.*) 303 fn.
 sad, Went away 343 fn.
 Sadly: Looks ~ 348; Walked back ~ 343 fn.
 Safely: as Obj. Compl. 374, 376 fn.; as Subj. Compl. 340, 349.
 Safety razor 110.
 Said his say 251.
 Sailor arrived in port 155.
 sailor short, A 173.

- Sailor's lad 111.
 St. Bartholomew's Hospital 116.
 St. James's Square 116.
 St. Martin's Lane 116.
 St. Paul's Cathedral 116.
 St. Valentine's Day 126.
 St. Valentine's Eve 116.
 sake's sake, For old 125.
 Salad days 104.
 Same time 163.
 Samoa style 180.
 Samoa woman 180.
 Sand-blind 179 fn.
 Sang their blank melody 252.
 Sank back exhausted 325.
 Sat him down 308 fn.
 Sat me down 98.
 Sat resting 148, 325.
 Sat silent(ly) 325, 343 fn.
 satisfied, I returned home 324.
 Saturday night 108, 165.
 Saturday night, Of a 219.
 Saturdays 194.
 Save (*prep.*) 65, 95.
 Save (*d. v.*) 44, 292.
 Save a dance for me 44.
 Save me some of that mutton 292.
 Save to lie down and die 65.
 Save when the spirit prompts 95.
 Saved me much trouble 292.
 Saving face 98 fn.
 Saw her happy 351.
 Saw him alive 377.
 Saw him strike me 369.
 Saw me asleep 377.
 saw the light, that it was good, God 248.
 Say (Parenthetic) 62.
 Say (*d. v.*) 82, 292 & fn.
 say, Said his 251.
 Say him (thee) nay 292 fn.
 Say me an unkind word 292.
 Scabbard and all 182.
 Scabbard-fish 106 fn.
 Scarce (=scarcely) 208 & fn.
 Scarcely 208 fn.
 Scheming to make 65.
 School house; School-house 107.
 Scoff: without Obj. 225.
 Screaming its strange, tiny, bellowing scream 256.
 Se repentir (de) (*Fr.*) 304 fn.
 Sea-coal fire 109.
 Sea-green 178.
 Sea-urchin 108.
 Sea's voice 117.
 season, Next 166.
 Secure (*d. v.*) 292.
 Secured me a compartment 292.
 See: without Obj. 32 fn.
 See (*f. v.*) 47, 48, 84, 253, 351, 357 & fn.; with Inf. as Compl. 37, 84, 92, 122, 148, 185, 211 fn., 217, 226, 253, 260 fn., 322, 369, 370; with Adv. as Compl. 376 fn., 377 & fn. See also under 'Saw,' 'Seen,' etc.
 See all of you bright and gay 84.
 See both these conditions fulfilled 253.
 See others drunken 357.
 see solved, Which you desire to 357 fn.
 See them plant tea 370.
 See you poor and wanting help 357.
 See you to-morrow 3 fn.
 Seeing is believing 66.
 Seeing me an exile 357.
 Seeing them to be 373 fn.
 Seek to learn 17.
 Seem+Subj. Compl. 35, 55, 69, 100, 103 fn., 129, 172, 188, 318 & fn., 324.
 Seem (Seemed, etc.) +Dative Infini-

- tive 69, 90, 92, 95, 100, 115 fn., 162 fn., 172, 238, 255, 275, 322, 329 fn., 337, 338 fn.
 Seem taken from us 318 fn.
 Seemed allied, and yet strangers 318.
 Seemed lost in thought 318 fn.
 Seemed surprised 318 fn.
 seemed the size of lions, The brutes 129.
 Seemed turned to stone 318 fn.
 Seems a circuitous way 324.
 Seems a very nice gentleman 318.
 Seems to be a splendid chance 337.
 Seems to be part 338 fn.
 Seems to be so slightly built 338 fn.
 seen ajar, A closet-door that he had 377 fn.
 seen alive, Be 347 fn.
 Seen and Unseen, The 87 fn.
 seen to laugh, Was 372.
 seines Weges, Er ging (*Germ.*) 192 fn.
 seldom, It was 344 fn.
 Selfish of you 102.
 Sell (*d. v.*) 292.
 Sell (Quasi-Passive) 140 fn.
 Sell me thy birthright 292.
 Send (*d. v.*) 42, 149, 292.
 Send (*f. v.*) 356 fn. See also under 'Sent.'
 Send you a line 292.
 sending away the servant, The 67 fn.
 senior, By many years (his) 171 fn.
 Sent me mad 356 fn.
 sent to crown (drive), I am 234.
 sentimental, The 73.
 Serve (*d. v.*) 292.
 Serve (*f. v.*): with Adv. as Compl. 340.
 Serve(s) her (you) right 208 & fn.
 Serve thee true and faithfully 341 fn.
 Served me a scurvy trick 292.
 Set (*d. v.*) 293.
 Set (*f. v.*) 356; with Adv. as Compl. 377 fn., 378 fn.
 set aflame, Been 347.
 Set free 336.
 Set him anything to do 293.
 Set the door ajar 377 fn.
 Set the door open 356.
 Set them right 356.
 Set to his seal 378 fn.
 Setting sun 26, 147.
 Several minutes 165.
 Severe of feature 223.
 Sevodnya (*Rus.*) 194 fn.
 sewn with pearls, A black mitre 112.
 shade too nervous, A 173.
 shade whiter, A 172.
 shades, Intenser by many 171 fn.
 Shades of night 32.
 Shake (*f. v.*) 356. See also under 'Shook.'
 Shan't be long 3 fn.
 shape, Maggie's arms are a pretty 129.
 sharp, Look 208.
 sharp, Three o'clock 210.
 Sharp's the word 100.
 Shaw's 'Androcles' 118.
 Sheep's eye 115, 122.
 She standing by him 240.
 Shepherd's call 269 fn.
 shilling's worth, One 115.
 shillings, Worth forty 278.
 shillings' value, Thirty 122.
 Shine+Subj. Compl. 222, 325. See also under 'Shining' and 'Shone.'
 Shines bright 200.
 Shining grey 215 fn.
 Shining plates 147.
 Shining whitely 343 fn.

- ship without a rudder, A 135.
 Ship's company 116.
 shockingly, Look 342.
 Shoe and all 182.
 Shone bright 325.
 Shone brightly 201 fn.
 Shone glorious 220.
 Shook herself free 356.
 Shoot (*d. v.*) 293. See also under 'Shot.'
 Shoot (*f. v.*) 356.
 Shoot him dead 356.
 Shoot himself 307.
 Short: Cut me ~ 357; Hath been cut ~ 333; Running ~ 316; Stop-
 (ped) ~ 327 & fn.
 short, A sailor 173.
 Short, In 56, 83.
 short and crisp, The cakes ate 330.
 Short journeys 161.
 Short of stature 222.
 short of the story, The 79.
 Shot him a glance 293.
 Shot-gun 212 fn.
 Shoulder-high 160, 177.
 Shouted for joy to find 235.
 Shouted their joy 263.
 Shouting congratulations 264.
 Show + Subj. Compl. 326 & fn.
 Show (*d. v.*) 42, 43, 55, 134, 293.
 Show (*f. v.*) 360.
 Show(ed) white(r) 326 fn.
 Showed her better satisfied 360.
 Showed pale 326.
 Showed themselves purple 326 fn.
 Showed through the paper, The ink
 52 fn.
 Shows best 326.
 shuddered to think, He 298 fn.
 Shut (*f. v.*): with Adv. as Compl.
 378 fn.
 shut to, The door was 346 fn.
- Shut the door to 378 fn.
 Shut to the door 373 fn.
 Sich brüsten (mit) (*Germ.*) 306 fn.
 Sick of endless sunshine 18.
 side, This (Adv. Accus.) 162.
 side, This (*prep.*) 19 fn.
 Side by side 183.
 Sideways 193.
 Sieh mir nicht so finster aus (*Germ.*)
 199 fn.
 sigh, Heaved a deep 244.
 Sighed a relief 267.
 Sighed a sigh 257 fn.
 Sighed a sigh of satisfaction 257.
 Sighed, the insincere and pity-seek-
 ing sigh 269 fn.
 Sighed to the full 268 fn.
 sighed to think, Lady Sark 332.
 sight worse, A long 172.
 Signboard 213 fn.
 Signor's rapid recovery 119.
 Silent: Sat ~ 325, 343 fn.; Stood ~
 275, 313; Was struck ~ 315 fn.
 silently, Sat 343 fn.
 silly, A 84.
 Silly and wise 81.
 Silver knife 107.
 Silver lining 107.
 Silver spoon 69.
 Silver Strand 107 fn.
 simplicity itself, (It) is 133, 317.
 Since 196.
 Since before you came 95.
 Since when 90.
 Sing (*d. v.*) 293.
 Sing a joyous song 251.
 Sing me a verse 293.
 Sing that song 250 fn.
 Single file 181.
 single file, In 181 fn.
 Sings to-see 226.
 Sink + Subj. Compl. 325.

- Sinned a great sin 257.
 sister Margaret, Your 320 fn.
 Sit + Subj. Compl. 312, 325. See
 also under 'Sat.'
 sit apart, strangers to one another,
 (They) 312.
 sit me down, I 303. See also un-
 der 'Sat.'
 Sit oneself down 306 & fn.
 sixpence-worth, Didn't trust him 175.
 sixty yards, In length 132.
 Sixty yards apart 170.
 Size: A kid of your ~; One my
 own ~ 132 fn.
 size and shape of a big coconut,
 Something 133.
 size of a football, A round thing
 132.
 size of lions, The brutes seemed the
 129.
 size smaller, A 172.
 sizes smaller, Many 172.
 Skin-deep 176.
 slack of his roundabout, The 74.
 slain, The 85.
 Slam (*f. v.*): with Adv. as Compl.
 378 fn.
 Slammed to, The door was 346.
 Slams the door to 378.
 sleep, An old man's 112.
 sleep, Never a wink could he 269 fn.
 sleep one wink, Could not 269 fn.
 Sleep our last sleep 261 fn.
 Sleep sounder 72.
 Sleep the sleep that knows not
 breaking 258 fn.
 Sleep their fill 262.
 Sleep two together 48.
 sleeping, The 85.
 Sleeping baby (child) 146.
 Sleeping car 144, 146.
 Sleeping-draught 150.
- Sleeping houses 146 fn.
 Sleeping son 349.
 Slept a sleep serener than an
 infant's 258 fn.
 Slept a wink, Hardly 269 fn.
 Slept not a wink 269 & fn.
 Slept the sleep of the just 257.
 Slow and steady 103.
 Slow-moving reformation 213.
 slower, Ran 214.
 sly, By the 81.
 sly, On the 81, 82.
 sly, Under the 81.
 small of his back, The 75.
 Smart-looking building 212 fn.
 Smell (Quasi-Passive) 329 & fn.
 Smell as sweet 329.
 Smell more sweetly 342 fn.
 Smelled sweet 329 fn.
 Smelled sweetly 342 fn.
 Smelling divinely 342 fn.
 Smelling sweetly 342 fn.
 Smells so good 329 fn.
 Smelt delicious 329.
 Smelt musty 329 fn.
 Smelt that smell 250 fn.
 Smelt unpleasantly 342 fn.
 Smile (*d. v.*) 267; with Cogn. Obj.
 267, 297.
 smile, a smile that would be like
 the passing of a cloud, (He)
 might 269 fn.
 Smile you a calm welcome 267, 297.
 Smiled acquaintance 265.
 Smiled acquiescence 265.
 Smiled, a little, sly, self-congrat-
 ulatory smile 269 fn.
 Smiled a sad smile 39.
 Smiled a smile of many meanings
 258 fn.
 Smiled a smile that had always
 captured Daisy's heart 258 fn.

Smiled a sneering smile 257.
 Smiled his charming smile 258 fn.
 Smiled my contempt 264.
 Smiled with the inward brooding smile of a Madonna 268 fn.
 Smiling at him with a smile that... 263 fn.
 Smiling one of his long special smiles 258 fn.
 Smiling village 147.
 Smoke: without Obj. 32 fn.
 Smoking brand 146.
 Smoking room 144.
 Smote me a buffet 252.
 Snoring the snore of the just 39.
 Snow-storm 75.
 Snow-white 178.
 so bad, None 188.
 So far forth days 194.
 So gracious as to forgive 282 fn.
 so long, For 276 fn.
 So solitary as to be unvisited 230.
 So that 48.
 Soaking wet 215.
 Sob out her love 267.
 Soft-spoken 151 fn.
 some, He worries 190 fn.
 Some better 190 fn.
 Some day 363.
 Some other time 163.
 Some time 322 fn.
 Some years 304.
 Something like this 187.
 Something over-wise 187.
 something to eat, I must get 140.
 Sometime 220 fn.
 somewhere else, Of 90.
 Soon: as Noun Equiv. 67 fn.
 Sororem frater amat (L.) 11.
 Sought to stone thee 221.
 Sound+Subj. Compl. 34, 216 fn., 237, 324.

Sound pagan and diabolical 326.
 sounder, Sleep 72.
 Sounds a thoroughly respectable language 34, 326.
 Sounds too good 237.
 southward, The 88.
 Soverayn Lord the Kyngys wyll, Our (M. E.) 127 fn.
 Spare (d. v.) 293 & fn.
 Spared his brother the worry 293.
 Sparkling gooseberry 282.
 Sparkling knives and forks 147.
 Speak (f. v.) 360.
 Speak ill of 42.
 Speak me fair in death 207.
 Speak the speeches 257 fn.
 speaking, Broadly 239.
 speaking, Comparatively 239.
 Speaks him brave and valiant 360.
 Speech: Coy of ~ 223; Niggard of your ~ 55.
 Speeches: Speak the ~ 257 fn.; Spoken her ~ 257.
 Speechless: Struck my old father ~ 356; Was struck ~ 315.
 speed, Full 180.
 speed, At full 180 fn.
 Spend a large expense 252.
 Spin me no spiders' webs 198.
 spirit, Fresh of 222.
 Splash of colour 135.
 splendid, Look 349 fn.
 splendidly, Looks 349.
 Splitting of hairs, What a 66 fn.
 spoken, Ill-, Well-, etc. 151 fn., 152.
 Spoken her speeches 257.
 spoken to tell, She would have 243.
 Sponge cake 107.
 Spreading chestnut-tree 105.
 staking your life, By 70.
 Stand (tr.) 39.
 Stand (d. v.) 293.

Stand+Subj. Compl. 178, 266, 275, 313, 318 fn., 326 & fn. See also under 'Stood.'
 Stand firm 326.
 Stand godfather 326 fn.
 Stand the cabby a drink 293.
 Stand your friends 326 fn.
 Standing at the window 239.
 Stands me in eight shillings 298 fn.
 Stands me two hundred dollars 298.
 Stare+Subj. Compl. 327.
 Stared quite fascinated 327.
 stared round me, I 308 fn.
 Start+Subj. Compl. 312.
 Started back a picture of consternation 312.
 Statesman 106 fn.
 Stature: Of ~ tall; Short of ~ 223.
 Stay (tr.) 157.
 Stay+Subj. Compl. 313.
 Stayed good friends, I 313.
 Steaming hot 215 fn.
 Steep, The 78.
 step, Move another 161.
 step or two, A 165 fn.
 Steeping hot 215.
 still, Stood 326.
 Stock-still 178.
 stone, Heart of 135.
 stone, Of smooth 135.
 Stone-blind 179.
 Stone walls 104.
 stone's throw, A 115.
 stones' throw, A few 124 fn.
 stood before her silent, I 313.
 Stood close 206 fn.
 Stood gazing 318 fn.
 Stood petrified 318 fn.
 Stood silent 275.
 Stood still 326.
 Stood the poor girl's friends 326 fn.

Stood them in much stead 196, 293 fn.
 Stood your guarantee 326.
 Stoop to drink 62.
 Stop+Subj. Compl. 327 & fn.
 Stop(ped) short 327 & fn.
 Stop work to listen 225.
 straight, Looked 208, 210 fn.
 Strange man to see 223 fn.
 straw, Don't care a 175.
 Straw hat 107.
 straws, Never cared three 174.
 Stretch+Subj. Compl. 327.
 Stretched bright and immeasurable 327.
 stricken, The 86.
 Strike (d. v.) 252, 293. See also under 'Struck.'
 Strike (f. v.) 352, 356. See also under 'Struck.'
 Strike the lot of us dead 352.
 Strike a stroke 250.
 Strive might and main to get 181.
 striving to escape, Was 256.
 Strongly-built figure 212 fn.
 Struck a mighty stroke 249.
 struck dead, Was 337.
 Struck herself a light 293.
 Struck my old father speechless 356.
 struck silent, Was 315 fn.
 struck speechless, Was 315.
 Struck the horse so violent a blow 252.
 Struck us dumb 356.
 Stuck: ~ close 163 fn., 206 fn.; ~ closely 206 fn.
 Stuff to drink 18.
 Stung to the quick 75.
 stupid, A 84.
 stwones' drow, Two or dree 124 fn.
 style, Samoa 180.
 Submarine 79 fn.

successful, The 80 fn.
 Sucked her fill 254.
 Sucking dove 199.
 sudden, Of a 222.
 Sufficient to stop 327.
 Suit another (one) 246.
 Summer evening twilight 110.
 summer evenings, Of the 219 fn.
 Summer grass 108.
 Summer night 76.
 Summer's evening 121.
 Sunday: Of ~ 219 fn.; Of a ~ 219;
 On a ~ 219 fn.
 Sunday afternoons 105.
 Sunday night cold supper 110.
 Sundays 194.
 Sunday-school 105.
 sunk, (The brave) 155.
 sunk, Three parts 170.
 Sunk corners of her mouth 155 fn.
 Sunk were his eyes 155 fn.
 Sunken eyes 155fn.
 sun's (glancing) rays, The 114, 118.
 Suppose (*f. v.*) 359, 360.
 Suppose it true 360.
 Suppose me a very old man 359.
 supposed ignorant, Be 337.
 Sure: ~ to grow 229; ~ to meet
 324.
 Sure (=surely) 210 & fn.
 Sure as a gun 210 fn.
 Sure as I live 210.
 Sure(ly) enough 210 fn.
 Surely 56, 57, 66 fn.
 surety, Of a 221.
 Surprised: ~ to find 333; ~ to see
 318 fn.
 Sussex chalk hills 110.
 Swallow (*f. v.*) 365.
 Swallowed them whole 365.
 Sweep (*d. v.*) 294. See also under
 'Swept.'

Sweep (*f. v.*) 352.
 Sweet: Smell(ed) ~ 329 & fn.;
 Tastes ~ 140 fn.
 sweet of you, How 102.
 Sweet-smelling air 147.
 Sweet-spoken old man 151 fn.
 sweetly, Smell(ed)(ing) 342 fn.
 Swept him the prettiest curtsy 294.
 Swept the sand smooth 352.
 Swete smelles (*M. E.*) 342 fn.
 Sword-cut 106.
 Sword-dance 106.
 Sword-fish 106.
 Sword-hand 106.
 sword's length, Within my 121.
 Sworn an oath 254.
 syhte, Such a wonder (*M. E.*) 172 fn.
 Syns (=since) 195 fn.

T

Tācan (*O. E.*) 274 fn.
 Take (*d. v.*) 294.
 Take (*f. v.*) 365.
 Take for 135.
 Take (it) for granted 85 fn., 367 &
 fn.
 Take, have, and keep are pleasant
 words 100.
 Take it easy 207 fn.
 Take this for certain 367 fn.
 Take what you can get and run 101.
 Taken for granted 339 fn.
 taken from us, Seem 318 fn.
 Taken his coffee too strong 355.
 Taken to wife 368 fn.
 taking, It's no joke 71.
 Taking false (true) for true (false)
 80.
 Talking of scandal 239.
 Talking of whisky 56 fn.
 tall, Of stature 222.

Taller by the head 171 fn.
 Taste (Quasi-Passive) 329 & fn.,
 330 & fn.
 Tasted awful (flat) 329.
 Tasted delicious 330 & fn.
 tasted like, What beer 343 fn.
 Tasted wet and cold 329 fn.
 tastes sweet, Sugar 140 fn.
 Tastes well 343 fn.
 Taught you to speak 300.
 tea-cups, Over the 32.
 Tea things 108.
 Teach (*d. v.*) 294.
 Teach you to make rummage 301.
 Teach you to make fool of me 301.
 Telegraph posts 170.
 Tell (*d. v.*) 42, 43, 59, 77, 136, 243,
 294. See also 199, 307.
 Tell: Etymology of 250 fn.
 Tell her not to overwalk herself
 199, 307.
 Tell the tale 250 fn.
 telling their origins, There was no
 68.
 temper, I found him as fine a 131.
 Ten years' absence 115.
 Tender (*d. v.*) 294 & fn.
 Tender you my service 294.
 termed the Ideal Butler, Been 51.
 Terrible long 204.
 Thank: Case after 246 fn.
 Thank God and his sword 246.
 Thank heaven 60.
 Thank me no thankings 103, 297.
 Thank you 3 fn.
 That (*conj.*): Origin of 59.
 That beautiful 191.
 That day 210, 293.
 That done 240.
 That evening 164.
 That far 191 fn.
 That free 190.

That is worthily 340.
 That much 190, 191 fn.
 That's verily 340.
 That there purse 158.
 That way 180.
 that way, Go 219.
 that ways, Going up 193.
 That year 164.
 Thatched one 150.
 The (in 'none the worse,' etc.):
 Etymology of 188 fn.
 The adored 86.
 The august or divine 73.
 The austere 80 fn.
 the bad, Go to 74.
 The beaten 86.
 The beautiful 74, 78.
 the best of my ability, To 77.
 the better, All 183.
 the better, For 77.
 The beyond 89.
 The biggest house there is 55.
 The blind 72.
 the blue, Out of 76 fn.
 The blue of heaven 76.
 the bottle, Five shillings 177 fn.
 The broad of his back 75.
 The calm 74.
 the carter, Poor Jenkins 111.
 The coming in of the tide 66 fn.
 The common 74.
 the common, Out of 81, 82.
 the common way, Out of 82 fn.
 The completing a tract 67 fn.
 The day long 170.
 The dead 72, 80 fn., 85, 86; treated
 as Singular 251.
 The dead of night 74.
 The deceased 85, 86.
 The deep (=sea) 79.
 The deep of his heart 76.
 The deep of night 74.

- The deepest deep of her heart 76.
 The demoniac 71 fn.
 The determined 87.
 the deuce, What 184.
 The devil: How ~ 184; What ~ 251; ~ you did 185.
 the dickens, What 184.
 The diligent 80 fn.
 The doing it 67 fn.
 The droll and laughable 74.
 The Dutch 72 fn.
 The English 72, 234.
 The entire of me 79.
 The evil 80 fn.
 The expedient 73.
 The fallen 86.
 The famous 73.
 The 5th day of August 164.
 The finding of a star 66 fn.
 The first opportunity 169.
 (The) first thing 169 & fn.
 The first thing to settle 140.
 The first time 168 fn.
 The first to break the silence 143.
 The flat of his back (hand) 75.
 The flat of our blades 351.
 the fool, Act 259 fn.
 The French 72.
 the full, To 81, 268 fn.
 The going to and fro 67 fn.
 The good 80 fn.
 The great and good 72.
 The having any 67 fn.
 The having nothing to do 67 fn.
 the head, Taller by 171 fn.
 The hearing of this 66 fn.
 The hell: Who ~; Why ~ 185 fn.; ~ you have 185 fn.
 The here 88.
 The hereafter 88.
 the highest, Wills 253.
 The idle 80 fn.
 The impossible 78.
 The inaccessible 78.
 The infamous 73.
 The just 39, 80 fn., 257.
 The "just what she pleased" 99.
 The killed 85.
 The larger of the two 77.
 The last market-day 164.
 The last thing 169.
 the lawyer, Mr. Utterson 54.
 the less, None 188.
 The like of these 136.
 The living 80 fn. 86.
 The locking-up the spirits 67 fn.
 The long and the short of it 79.
 the lunatic, Playing 251.
 The luxurious 80 fn.
 the main, In 81, 82.
 The man I saw yesterday at the theatre's father 128.
 The marvellous 73.
 The mightiest of thy greatest enemies 77.
 the more interesting, All 52.
 The more marketable 188.
 The mourning 86.
 The new 78.
 The next time 168 fn.
 The night 167.
 The obvious 78.
 The old 72, 319 fn.
 the older, Any 187.
 The oppressed 85.
 The other day 22.
 The passing these two bills 201.
 The perjured 85.
 The picturesque 73.
 The poor 72, 80 fn.
 the quick, Stung to 75.
 The quick and the dead 86 fn.
 the quick o' the ulcer, To 75 fn.
 The quiet 73, 319 fn.

- the quiet, On 81, 82.
 The reading of history 66 fn.
 The repealing of my banish'd brother 66 fn.
 The reverse of playful 100.
 The rich 72, 80 fn.; treated as Singular 71 fn.
 The right 73.
 the right, On 81.
 the right, To 81, 304 fn.
 The same day 164.
 The Seen and the Unseen 87 fn.
 The sending away the servant 67 fn.
 The sense of being exposed 68.
 The sentimental 73.
 The short of the story 79.
 The shortest way 161.
 The slack of his roundabout 74.
 The slain 85.
 The sleeping 85.
 the sly, By (Under) 81.
 the sly, On 81, 82.
 The small of his back 75.
 The southward 88.
 The steep 78.
 The stricken 86.
 The successful 80 fn.
 The then king 156.
 The then position of affairs 156.
 The thick of the fair (snow-storm) 75.
 the time, All 163 fn., 183, 206 fn.
 The time I name 166.
 The time to come 136, 143.
 The trivial 74.
 The true performing of it 66 fn.
 The unjust 80 fn.
 The unsuccessful 80 fn.
 The usual 78.
 the usual, Out of 81.
 The vast undone 87.
 The very week 164.
 the waiter, Our friend 111.
 The watering of flowers 66 fn.
 The way to secure her 144.
 The weary 72.
 The when 88.
 The while 163.
 the whiles, All 195.
 The white of an eye 76.
 The whites of his eyes 76 fn.
 the whole, On 57, 81, 82.
 The whole evening 167.
 The whole way along 161.
 the whole year, Last them 299.
 The why and wherefore 88.
 The wise 72, 157.
 the woman, Play 259 fn.
 The worse: Any ~ 187 fn.; None ~ 187.
 the worse, For 78.
 the worst, Tell us 77.
 The wounded 85.
 The wounding of our vanity 206 fn.
 The wretched 71.
 Theatres begun under Augustus 151.
 theme I came to talk of, The very 99.
 then, Till 89, 341 fn.
 then king, The 156.
 then position of affairs, The 156.
 Thence 196.
 Thens (=thence) 196 fn.
 There being now no rain 240.
 there is, The biggest house 55.
 There is always 'but' 99.
 There is no going fast 69.
 There 's no pleasing you 61.
 There was no denying (telling) 63.
 There was nothing for it but 63.
 These twenty long years 166.
 thick of the fair (snow-storm), The 75.
 thing, (The) first 169 & fn.

- thing, The last 169.
 Thing(s) to do 138 & fn.
 thing to settle, The first 140.
 Things heard 150.
 Things of course 135.
 Things seen 150.
 Things to eat and drink 141 fn.
 Think (*f. v.*) 47, 55, 176, 227, 350, 360; with Adv. *as* Compl. 378.
 Think fit (proper) 367 fn.
 Think him a very wonderful writer 350.
 Think of the past—what it's been 249 fn.
 Think your conduct disgraceful 360.
 Thinking his or her diverse thought 251.
 Thinking of asking 277 fn.
 Thinking to preach 238.
 Thirty years back 109.
 This autumn 339 fn.
 This early 190 fn.
 This here house 153.
 This instant 165.
 This morning 164.
 This much 190, 191 fn.
 This side (Adv. Accus.) 162.
 This side (*prep.*) 19 fn.
 this side the Grave, On 19.
 This time 22, 162, 164, 282 fn.
 This very day 238.
 This way: Come ~ 160; More ~ 161.
 This way or that 165 fn.
 This way...that 165 fn.
 This weather 199, 307.
 This winter 283 fn.
 thought a loiterer, Be 337.
 Thought fit to change 367 fn.
 Thought him the noblest creature in the world 360.
 thought hym self, He (*M. E.*) 304.
 Thought it as well 378.
 Thought it best to leave 113 fn.
 thought me, I 304.
 Thought proper to wait 367 fn.
 Thought to see 66.
 thought too often, A 173.
 thought very eccentric, Was 337.
 Thousands strong 174.
 Three miles' distance 121.
 Three parts: ~ drunk 231; ~ sunk 170.
 three straws, Never cared 174.
 Three weeks 167.
 Threw his companion the maple stick 294.
 thrilled with pride to think, I 235.
 Thritty year of age (*M. E.*) 129 fn.
 Throat pastilles 288 fn.
 Through ticket 156.
 Throw (*d. v.*) 294 & fn. See also under 'Threw.'
 Throw (*f. v.*) 352.
 Throw myself 307.
 thrown open, Was 337.
 Throws the window open 352.
 Thursdays 195 fn.
 τί σοι μαθήσομαι 199 fn.
 Tiber banks 106 fn., 260 fn.
 Tight (=tightly) 208 & fn.
 Tight: Closed her mouth ~; Holding (Hold on) ~ 208 fn.; Pulled the door ~ 208.
 Tight-fitting overcoat 212 fn.
 Tightly closed 208 fn.
 Till after the General Election 93.
 Till afterwards 90.
 till dinner-time, You can have 91.
 Till quite recently 90.
 till ten to-night, You have 91.
 Till then 89, 341 fn.
 till to-morrow morning, I give you 19.

- Time: A ~ 67 fn., 165; All the ~ 163 fn., 183, 206 fn.; He stayed his customary ~ 166; Same ~ 163; Some ~ 322 fn.; Some other ~ 163; The first (next) ~ 168 fn.; This ~ 22, 162, 164, 282 fn.
 Time: ~ to add a further protest 378; ~ to breathe 295; ~ to leave any stone unturned 365; ~ to repress those inroads 359; ~ to talk 144.
 time and oft, Many a 168.
 time I name, The 166.
 Time out of mind 135 fn., 164.
 time to come, The 136, 143.
 Times: A hundred ~ 152; A thousand ~ 168; Many (Several) ~ 168; Twenty mortal ~ 168.
 Tip (*d. v.*): with Cogn. Obj. 297.
 Tipped him a soft curtsy 297.
 'Tis truly 349 fn.
 Title-page 112.
 To: as Obj. Compl. 378 & fn.; as Subj. Compl. 346 & fn.
 To: Bring her ~ 378 fn.; Let the door swing ~ 346 fn.; Pulled the door ~ 378; Shut the door ~ 378 fn.; Slams the door ~ 378 fn.; The door was shut ~ 346 fn.; The door was slammed ~ 346; The horses are ~ 346 fn.; When she came ~ 346 fn.
 to and fro, The Going 67 fn.
 to answer, Hard question 228 fn.
 to attack, Thought us cowardly 227.
 To be: Apt ~ 228; Dying ~ 229 fn.; Grew up ~ 234; Has ~ 349; It was not ~ 358; Likely ~ 344; Seem(ed)(s) ~ 115 fn., 172, 238, 357, 338 fn., etc.; Turn out ~ 23, 338 & fn.
 to be afraid, You coward 236.
 To be ashamed to be 65.
 to be asking, Seemed 275.
 to be attained, Height 142.
 to be blamed, Is 139.
 to be compared, Are not 139.
 To be come to 204 fn.
 to be done, It's got 202.
 to be done, There was little work 138.
 to be done, What's (was) 142 & fn.
 To be forgotten 66.
 To be frank with you 238.
 to be frightened, Call me a coward 227.
 to be got, There's no coach 19 fn.
 to be husband and wife, What it is 181.
 To be let: House ~ 138; Which was ~ 139.
 to be lost, There is not an instant 138.
 to be obtained, Easy 236.
 To be plain with you 238.
 To be quite plain 238.
 to be rid, Loth 189.
 to be said, There is no more 133.
 To be sincere 232.
 To be sure 231.
 to be thinking, Seemed 251.
 to be thought, Did not care 337.
 to be thought of, There is another child 21.
 to be true, Too good 237.
 to be unvisited, So solitary as 230.
 to bear, Hard 228.
 to bear, Help 378 fn.
 to beg, Began 291.
 to begin, How 98.
 To begin with 231.
 to behave, How 304 fn.
 to behold, All impatience 133.

- to behold, Queer couple 228 fn.
 to bestir himself, Began 305.
 to bethink me, Chanced 308 fn.
 to blame, I am 139.
 to bloom, Continue 261.
 to break the silence, The first 143.
 to breathe, Vouchsafe us time 295.
 to bring children to, This is no place 144.
 to build, Begin 23.
 to buy, Asking you 277 fn.
 to buy, I had no anxiety 110.
 to buy, Persuade them 253.
 to care for, I shall have nobody left 363.
 to catch him napping, Hoped 358.
 to change, Thought fit 367 fn.
 to come, Afraid 160.
 to come, Began 83, 94.
 to come, It is quite common for a car 219 fn.
 to come, Seemed 92.
 to come, The time 136, 143.
 to come, Twenty years 156.
 to come, What was yet 144.
 to come, Worlds 143.
 to come alive, Seemed 319 fn.
 to compare, Is not 139.
 To complete our helplessness 232.
 To conclude 237.
 to continue, Unfit 333.
 to crack, Tough nut 193.
 to crown, I am sent 234.
 to-day, For 94.
 To-day's newspaper 115.
 to deceive, Easy man 239 fn.
 to delight, Seemed 69.
 to deliver, Was commanded 335 fn.
 to deprive, Barbarous and bloody - Tamburlaine 235.
 to describe, Easy 228.
 to describe, Hard 237.
 to develop, Going 162 fn.
 to die, Deserves 64.
 to die, From 63 fn.
 to disagree, Certain 229.
 to dislike me, For my daughter 120.
 to dislike or to despise, Impossible 239 fn.
 to disregard, Seem 90.
 to distinguish, Able 339 fn.
 to do, At liberty 99.
 to do, How 221 fn.
 to do, Promise you 283 fn.
 to do, Set him anything 293.
 to do, The only right thing 138 fn.
 to do, There were but two things 138.
 to do, Tried 180.
 to do, Too sickly 230.
 to do, What's 142.
 to do, What 98, 125 fn.
 to do them justice, I have no room 280 fn.
 to draw, He called for England's chiefest architect 244.
 to dream, Began 250.
 to drink, Loved 357.
 to drink, Stoop 62.
 to drink, Stuff 18.
 to drink, Old-fashioned enough 218.
 to drink, Water 136 fn.
 to drive, I am sent 234.
 to eat, I must get something 140.
 to eat, Ready 228.
 to eat and drink, Things 141 fn.
 to elapse, Had 62.
 to enter, Privileged 239 fn.
 to enter, Wished 27.
 To err is human 17.
 to escape, Was striving 256.
 to exist, How was (it) 184.
 to expect, Seemed 95.
 to fall, Readie 196 fn.
 to fancy, Invited them 313.

- to fear, Beginning 166.
 to fear, There is nothing 259 fn.
 to fear, There was still one disaster 141.
 to feel, Seemed 322.
 to fetch, One more 141.
 to find, No easy matter 228 fn.
 to find, Only 18, 226.
 to find, Shouted for joy 235.
 to find, Surprised 333.
 to find her room all sunshine, She woke 133.
 to find myself..., I got out of the wood 234.
 to find that..., I returned from a holiday 226.
 to fix, I shall be glad 20.
 to foot it, I made up my mind 271.
 To forgive divine 17.
 to forgive, So gracious as 282 fn.
 to form, We are trying 245.
 to foul that innocent life, Scamp that I was 227.
 to friend, We shall have him 368 fn.
 to gain, Fortunate enough 230.
 to get, Able 90.
 to get, I'm not going 58.
 to get, Strive might and main 181.
 to give, I'd like us 118.
 to give, Seemed 329 fn.
 to go, Dying 229 fn.
 to go, Had 253.
 to go, Like us both 210 fn.
 to go, Ready 58.
 to go, You will be a fool 227.
 to go wrong, Began 125.
 to grow, Sure 229.
 to grow, Were let 372.
 to have, I'll be proud 371.
 to have been staved, We were like 66.
 To have continued 66.
 to have left their city unfortified, Fools, 236.
 to have me go, Afraid 371.
 to hear, I'm delighted 235.
 to hear her sing, Liked 369.
 to his seal, Set 378 fn.
 to horse, Hie you 199.
 to irritate, Careful not 229.
 To judge from the dignity of their appearance 238.
 To judge from the sound 211.
 to kindle, Too wet 237.
 to know, At a loss 236.
 to know, Curious 229.
 to know, Desire 288, (cf. 312).
 to know, Dying 229.
 to know, Impatient 305.
 to know, Eating our hearts out 230.
 to laugh, Began 258 fn.
 to lay, Endeavoured 284.
 to lay hold, When 98.
 to lead a jolly life, Entirely in the right 72.
 to learn, Have so much 141.
 to learn, Seek 17.
 to learn, Was depressed 226.
 to leave, Thought it best 113 fn.
 to leave any stone unturned, A time 365.
 to lend, Ready 285.
 To let; House ~ 137 f.; That was ~ 139.
 to let me, So kind of you 102.
 To let people know 320 fn.
 to let them alone, When 98.
 to lie down and die, Save 65.
 to listen, Call to us to pause and 94.
 to listen, Dreadful 236.
 to listen, Stop work 225.
 To little purpose 135.
 to live, How long she had 91, 300 fn.

- to live in a hen run, Asking a badger 97.
 to live in, Fit 228.
 to look, Ceased 65.
 to look, Have 58.
 to look, I advise you all 208.
 to look, I want you 261.
 to look at me, You wouldn't think 233.
 To look at them, you would have thought 233.
 To look close 206.
 to look upon, Pleasant 237.
 to lord it over me, I would have no woman 271.
 to lose, We have not a moment 138.
 to lose my temper, I do wrong 239 fn.
 to lose my temper, Caused me 113.
 to lose you, Most grieved 227.
 to make, Scheming 65.
 to make, I should like 203 fn.
 to make, Seem 100.
 to make, You choose 307.
 to make, What helped most 69.
 To make a long story short 232.
 to make fun of, Easy 239 fn.
 to make him president, Doing their best 252.
 To make matters clear 231.
 to make my father cry, A wicked body 227.
 To make that speech hers 353.
 To make up for lost time 27.
 to match these, Beryls 143.
 to meet, Sure 324.
 to mention, Anxious 229.
 To mention a great secret 232.
 to more strength, Put 378 fn.
 to move off, Does not know how 257.
 To my complete amazement 218.
 To my surprise 218.
- to-night, For 169.
 to^o obey, I charge thee 247 fn.
 To one's heart's content 115, 126.
 To one's wits' end 115, 125 fn.
 to overwalk, Tell her not 199, 307.
 to pause, Call to us 94.
 to pay, But 63.
 to permit, Too violent 120 fn.
 to personify, 'I' is introduced 99.
 to persuade, Trying his best 231.
 to persuade them to buy 253.
 to play, There should be no band 219.
 to play a sorry farce, Forced 255.
 to please, Difficult man 228 fn.
 to please, So hard 55.
 to point, Afraid 191.
 to practise, Tell me how 371.
 to pray, Remained 225.
 to pray, Expects you 255.
 to preach, Thinking 238.
 to prick ourselves, Leave our thorn 375.
 to prince it, Prompts them 270.
 to provide, But 233.
 to provide, Beg him 289.
 to publish, Intended 67 fn.
 to punish the perjured, Revisit the earth 85.
 to pursue the expedient, Leave the right 73.
 to queen it, Hire me 270.
 to quote, Used 289.
 to ramble in, Select the thick of the snow-storm 75.
 to ravish, Enough 66 fn.
 to read, Who asked me 230.
 to read, Do us the favour 280 fn.
 to read and think of, Found much 221.
 to receive me, If you should have no objection 289.

- to recommend, Asked me 290.
 to regain, Anxious 234.
 to relate, I am going 73.
 to relate, He took the pains 290.
 to repent, You will live 225.
 to repress these inroads, Time 359.
 to restrain, It was impossible 35.
 to return, Permit me 292.
 to return, Only 234.
 To return from this digression 237.
 To return to the said Vale of White Horse 232.
 to ride, Apt 179.
 to ride on, No horse 271.
 to run, I like 96.
 to satisfy, Hard man 239 fn.
 to save a dance, You're 44.
 to say, Have much more 50.
 to say, Seemed 255.
 to say, There is no more 138.
 to say, What Captain Brown can have 229.
 to say, What have you got 82.
 to say, (He) would have nothing 282.
 to say that, How sweet of you 102.
 to scoff, Came 225.
 to secure her, The way 144.
 to see, Loved 357.
 to see, Sings 226.
 to see, Strange man 228 fn.
 to see, Thought 66.
 to see a white world, He woke 234.
 to see all of you bright, I wish 84.
 To see both these conditions fulfilled 253.
 to see her, You'll be glad 25.
 to see if he were overheard, He glanced round 224.
 to see me, He seemed surprised 318 fn.
 to see Mr. Truby, Going 69.
 to see poorly people, You expect 344.
 to see the old place, Louis would like 38.
 to see others drunken, He loved 357.
 to see solved, Desire 357 fn.
 to see you, I'm glad 226.
 to see you, It does me good 42.
 to see you, Mother 'd love 64.
 to see you poor, I grieve 235, 357.
 to seek, Is not far 228 fn.
 To seek to learn its secrets 17.
 to seize, If you want 48.
 to seize, He turned in time 74.
 to serve, Began 340.
 to settle, The first thing 140.
 to shift for themselves, Turn them out 280.
 to show, There was enough suffering 25.
 to sing, I like 96.
 to sit, Able 121.
 to sit, Promise 166.
 to sit, Used 219 fn.
 to sleep, Got 250.
 to sleep, No intention of trying 70.
 to sleep in, A small closet 275.
 to sow, How 98.
 to spare, An hour 142 fn.
 to spare, Anxious 293 fn.
 to spare, Credit, and 142.
 to spare, Enough and 141.
 to spare, Room and 141 f.
 To speak frankly 56, 232.
 fō speak ill, It gives me pain 42.
 to spend, A pensive hour 303.
 to spend, Persuade her 231.
 to stand, Hope 326 fn.
 to stand upon, An inch of ground 144.
 to stay, Going 166.
 to stone thee, Sought 221.
 to stop, Sufficient 327.

- to strike, Hot 253.
 to suggest such a thing, How unkind of you 102.
 to surmount, Obstacle 142.
 to swim through, For the infantry 113.
 to take, I have a train 140.
 to take, What 140.
 to take an interest, Continue 125.
 to take it, It was necessary 210 fn.
 to talk, I had no time 144.
 To talk of burning I O U's 123.
 to talk of, The very theme I came 99.
 to tame Brunhild, For daring 62.
 to tear him, Would have power 183.
 to tell, Ashamed 284 fn.
 to tell, Begged us 300 fn.
 to tell, Obliged 59.
 to tell, She would have spoken 243.
 to tell, Too long 230.
 to tell, Too long a story 239 fn.
 to tell, Truth 238.
 to tell, Used 199, 307.
 To tell the truth 233.
 to thank you, I cannot find words 144.
 To the best of my ability 77.
 to the door, Shut 378 fn.
 To the full 81; 268 fn.
 to the quick, Stung 75.
 To the quick o' the ulcer 75 fn.
 To the right 81, 304 fn.
 to think, He shuddered 298 fn.
 to think, I thrilled with pride 235.
 to think, It truns me cold 352.
 to think, Lady Sark sighed 332.
 to think, Seemed 162 fn.
 to think of, He found much 221.
 to think of following, Foolish woman 236.
 to throw her out, Make some arrangements 128 fn.
 to thy wedded husband, Have this man 368 fn.
 to touch the divine person, For daring 363.
 to trade, I've come here 224.
 to turn, Where 98.
 to understand, Curious thing 228 fn.
 to wait, I had no choice but 65.
 to wait, Had long 91.
 to wait, Thought proper 367 fn.
 to wander, Is she mad 227.
 to watch, Began 240.
 to watch, Harry's heart was pained 235.
 to wear, I haven't a rag 140.
 to wear gloves, You do well 239 fn.
 to where he had witnessed her performance 95.
 To wife: Give me thy daughter ~; Her will I give thee ~; Taken Catharine ~ 368 fn.
 To within an arrow's flight 93.
 To within four yards 237.
 to writanne (*O. E.*) 17 fn.
 to write, I'll ask you 300 fn.
 to write his orders, It was his way 114 fn.
 to your fingers, Lay 378 fn.
 Told the story 252 fn.
 To-morrow morning 324.
 Too good to be true 237.
 too hopeful, None 188.
 Too long a story to tell 239 fn.
 Too long to tell 230.
 too often, A thought 173.
 Too sickly to do 230.
 Too violent to permit 120 fn.
 Too wet to kindle 237.
 Took any notice of 19.
 took the pains to relate, He 290.
 Touch closely 206 fn.

- Tough nut to crack 193.
 town-born and bred, A man 150.
 Town Committee 181.
 Townspeople 106 fn.
 Tracing finger 319 fn.
 trade are you of, What 131 fn.
 trade art thou, What 131, 245.
 Tradesman 106.
 Trafalgar Square 108.
 train to take, I have a 140.
 Tram it 271.
 Traveller from an antique land 18.
 Traveller's indifference 95.
 Travelling-frock 145.
 trick, Play any man a 287.
 tried a holy man, Been 337.
 Tried his hardest 253.
 Tried to do 180.
 trifle under medium height, A 173.
 Trip it 270.
 trivial, The 74.
 trivial of him, How very 102.
 Trosach's dread defile 126.
 Troubled was no word for it 100.
 Trouser pocket 108.
 Trousers' pocket 117.
 Troy's neck 76.
 True: Rang ~ 325; Read ~ 330.
 true and faithfully, Serve thee 341 fn.
 true for false, Taking 80.
 truly, 'Tis 349 fn.
 trust him sixpence-worth, Didn't 175.
 truth, Of a 222.
 Truth to tell 238.
 Trying his best to persuade 231.
 Trying to form 245.
 trying to sleep, No intention of 70.
 Turn (*d. v.*) 294.
 Turn (*f. v.*) 352.
 Turn+Subj. Compl. 33, 314 & fn., 319, 327 & fn.
 turn, Do me a shrewd 280 fn.
 turn and turn about, 'Tis 101.
 Turn Christian 327.
 Turn out+Subj. Compl. 315, 327.
 Turn out to be 23, 338 & fn.
 Turn them out to shift for themselves 280.
 Turned ashen pale 314 fn.
 Turned away, melancholy 343 fn.
 Turned chilly 327 fn.
 Turned heavy and musty 327.
 Turned him the cold shoulder 294.
 turned in time to seize, He 74.
 Turned out a great success 315.
 Turned out a very unfortunate occurrence 327.
 Turned pale 319.
 Turned sadly away 343 fn.
 Turned the colour of peony 314.
 turns me cold to think, It 352.
 twelfwintre, Héo wæs (*O. E.*) 129 fn.
 twenty long years, These 166.
 Twenty minutes 54.
 Twenty years to come 156.
 Twenty years younger 171.
 Twice 196.
 Twice (=twice) 196 fn.
 Two months afterwards 51.
 two pair of stairs' window, A 123 fn.
 two together, Sleep 48.
 Two-year-olds 84.
 Two years after 225.
 Two years later 335.
 Two years my senior 171.
- U
- Unanswered epistles 323.
 Unbroken darkness 219 fn.
 Uncle George 111.
 Uncle me no uncle 297.
 Uncommon pretty 203.
 Uncommonly good 203 fn.

under every brass, From 92.
 Under the sly 81.
 Underground 79 fn.
 undone, The vast 87.
 Une fille nouveau-née (*Fr.*) 200 fn.
 unfavourably, Looked not 349.
 Unfit to continue 333.
 unjust, The 80 fn.
 unkind of you, How 102.
 unpleasantly, Smelt 342 fn.
 Unsmirked her smirk 258.
 unsuccessful, The 80 fn.
 Until after they had begun the meal 95.
 Untrodden snow 311.
 Untuned voice 372 fn.
 Unwell 354.
 Unwounded warrior 85 fn.
 Up: as Subj. Compl. 157 fn., 345 & fn.
 up, The moon is 345.
 Ups and downs 90.
 Up train 156.
 Ure lauerd beo iponked (*M. E.*) 246 fn.
 Us the best place, You 've lost 198.
 Use: A Bible was no ~ 131; It is no ~ 129; Of no ~ 136.
 Used: ~ to fight 248 fn.; ~ to quote 289; ~ to sit 219 fn.; ~ to tell 199, 307.
 Usefulness itself, It is 133.
 usual, Out of the 81.
 usual, The 78.
 utmost, Do my 253.

V

vain, In 82.
 value a fourpenny piece, Don't 175.
 value her a rotten nut, Don't 175.
 Van Diemen's Island 116.

Vanished race 152.
 Varying moods 87 fn.
 vast undone, The 87.
 Vaulting ambition 306 fn.
 Verily 202 fn.
 verily, That 's 340.
 Verse it 270.
 Very: Etymology of 202 fn.
 Victory's deck, The 116.
 View (*f. v.*) 357.
 View us Emperors 357.
 Village people 108.
 Village smithy 105.
 Villain's mind 122.
 virtue, Man of 54, 134.
 Visiting range 146.
 voice, Bold of 223.
 Vote (*d. v.*) 295.
 Voted Mr. Pickwick a pair of gold-spectacles 295.
 Vouchsafe (*d. v.*) 295.
 Vouchsafe us time 295.
 Vowed a vow 251.
 Vulture scream 153.

W

Wage (*d. v.*) 295.
 Waged them war 295.
 Waist-high 176.
 Wait: ~ a bit 162; ~ a life-time 166.
 Walk+Subj. Compl. 312.
 walk, Instead of 63 fn.
 Walk it 271.
 Walked back sadly 343 fn.
 Walked into the Reading-room, a happy, healthy man 312.
 Walked London hospitals 109.
 Walked the captive 255.
 Walked the deck 162.
 Walked the world 162 fn.

Walketh you right speedily 199.
 Walking mystery 49.
 Walking-stick 145.
 Walking tour 145.
 Wall-paper 319 fn.
 Want (*f. v.*) 363; with Adv. as Compl. 377, 378.
 Want the whole thing out 378.
 Want to seize 48.
 want you to look, I 261.
 wanted done, What I 363.
 Wanted it over 378.
 Wanted the locks away 377.
 War minister 108.
 Warships 227.
 War-worn and weather-beaten countenance 150.
 'Was' is not 'is' 98.
 was yet to come, What 144.
 Watch (*f. v.*) 86, 239 357; with Infinitive as Compl. 48, 370.
 Watched her read 370.
 Watched her walking 357.
 Watched him enter 48.
 Watched the visitors come 370.
 Watched them eat 370.
 Water to drink 136 f.
 Water-spouts 80.
 watering of flowers, The 66 fn.
 Wave (*d. v.*) 267; with Cogn. Obj. 297.
 Waved a frantic negative 267.
 Waved a greeting 268.
 Waved good-day 267.
 Waved her an adieu 267, 297.
 Waved reply 267.
 Wax+Subj. Compl. 327.
 Waxed warm 327.
 Way: A different ~ 180; Another ~ 161; Any ~ 180; Come this ~ 160; Coming her ~ 161; Go that ~ 219; His own ~ 179; More this

~; Peterborough ~ 161; That ~ 180; The shortest ~ 161; Which ~ 248.
 way along, The whole 161.
 way and...the other, One 165 fn.
 way home, On your 158.
 way or that, This 165 fn.
 way...that, This 165 fn.
 way to secure her, The 144.
 way up, Half 170.
 Ways: A little ~; All the ~ 193 fn.; Come thy ~ 192; Go her ~; Going that ~; Go my ~ 193; Go my own ~ 254; Went his ~ 193.
 Ways: Both ~ 325; Many ~ 179.
 weather, This 199, 307.
 Weather-beaten countenance 150.
 Weatherbury farmhouses 92 fn.
 Wednesdays 195 fn.
 week, The very 164.
 week's work, A 121.
 weeks, Three 167.
 Weep your tears 260 fn.
 weight, (She was) by far the lightest 130.
 Well: as Obj. Compl. 378; as Subj. Compl. 344 & fn.
 Well (Parenthetic) 61.
 well, He is 344.
 well, That is 344 fn.
 Well and good 344 fn.
 Well begun is half done 103.
 Well-behaved little girl 153.
 Well man 345 fn.
 Well off 346.
 well read, She was 151 fn.
 Well-read ladies 151 fn.
 Wendon þa oðres wæges hamweard (*O. E.*) 192.
 Went away sad 343 fn.
 Went bankrupt 322.
 Went greenish 322.

Went his ways 193.
 Went lame 314.
 went me to rest, I (*M. E.*) 308.
 Went mountains high 178.
 went to and fro, *Scarlet* with shame 312.
 went to my school as cross as two sticks, I 313.
 Went whiter 34.
 Went wrong 9.
 Wept passionate tears 260 fn.
 Wept silent tears 260.
 Wept some of the most genuine tears 260 fn.
 Wept tears of blood 260 fn.
 West and south 162.
 We will say (*Parenthetic*) 62.
 Whale-backs 263.
 What (*rel. adj.*) 5, 165.
 What (*inter. adj.*): as *Connective* 21.
 What (*inter. pron.*): as *Connective* 20, 25, 28, 43, 60, 72, etc.
 What (*rel. pron.*) 21, 27, 49, etc.
 What between 190.
 What can words avail 186.
 What Captain Brown can have to say 229.
 What do they matter 186 fn.
 What does Bessie care 186.
 What have you got to say 82.
 What heinous sin is it in me 65.
 What if 344 fn., 365.
 What in hell 185 fn.
 What it is to be husband and wife 181.
 what knowledge he has, Makes the most of 5.
 What need I fear 186.
 What nonsense you talk 37.
 What on earth 185 fn.
 What's more 112.
 What's to be done 142 fn.

What's to do 142.
 What the deuce 184.
 What the devil 251.
 What the dickens 184.
 What trade are you of 131 fn.
 What trade art thou 131, 245.
 What: ~ to do 98, 125 fn.; ~ to take 140.
 What was yet to come 144.
 What with 189.
 Whatever (*inter. pron.*) 21.
 Whatever (*rel. pron.*) 27.
 whatever, No response 52.
 Whatever is, is 6.
 Whatever is in its causes just 7.
 Wheat-rick 177.
 when, Since 90.
 when, The 88.
 When I am happiest 96.
 when the spirit prompts, Save 95.
 When: ~ to lay hold; ~ to let them alone 98.
 Whence (*rel. adv.*) 22.
 whence, Its 88.
 Where (*rel. adv.*) 5, 38, 72, etc.
 Where: functioning as *Adv.* and *Noun Equiv.* at the same time 87 fn.
 where, A better 88.
 Where are you going 87.
 Where do you come from 87 f.
 Where...there 33.
 Where to turn 93.
 Where we are: as *Noun Equiv.* 96.
 where he had witnessed her performance, To 95.
 wherefore, A 88.
 Whether (*conj.*) 23.
 Which (*rel. pron.*) 25, 38, 40, etc.
 Which way 248.
 While: *Etymology* of 163 fn.
 While: All this ~ 163; For a ~ 163

fn., 251; For a little ~ 254; Quite a ~; The ~ 163; Worth our ~ 260 fn.; Worth your ~ 48.
 Whiles 83.
 whiles, All the 195.
 whin-blossom, *Cares* a 123, 175.
 Whit: *Etymology* of 171 fn.
 whit better, Not a 171.
 whit superior, No 172.
 white of an eye, The 76.
 whites of his eyes, The 76 fn.
 Whitewashed inn 213 fn.
 Whither (*inter. adv.*): as *Connective* 60.
 whither, Its 88.
 Who(m) (*rel. pron.*) 22, 24, 28, 49, 50, etc.
 Who the hell 185 fn.
 whole, On the 57, 81, 82, 349.
 whole evening, The 167.
 whole way along, The 161.
 whole year, Last them the 299.
 Why: *Etymology* of 186 fn.
 Why (*inter. adv.*): as *Connective* 46.
 why, Every 88.
 why and wherefore, The 88.
 Why the hell 185 fn.
 wicked body to make my father cry, A 227.
 Wig and all 183.
 wild-goose chase, Run the 260 fn.
 Wills the highest 253.
 Win (*d. v.*) 295. See also under 'Won.'
 Wind-shield 319, 343 fn.
 Window-sill 122.
 Windows standing open 147.
 Wine merchant 108.
 Winging its solitary flight 260.
 Wink: Could not sleep one ~; Hardly slept a ~ 269 fn.; Slept not

a ~ 269 & fn.; Never a ~ could he sleep 269 fn.
 Winking a wink of strategic meaning 258.
 Winking glasses 147.
 winter, This 283 fn.
 Winter fire 108.
 Winters 194 & fn.
 Wiped his napkins all over his mouth 247 fn.
 wise, The 72, 157.
 wiser, A 84.
 Wish (*d. v.*) 295 & fn.
 Wish (*f. v.*) 48, 120, 363; with *Adv.* as *Compl.* 377, 378.
 wish followed, The course I 120.
 Wish him miles away 377.
 Wish it otherwise 378.
 Wish the ceremony performed 48.
 Wish to see all of you bright 84.
 Wish you a good afternoon 295 fn.
 Wish you a pleasant walk 295.
 Wish'd me happy 363.
 Wished to enter 27.
 wit's end, At one's 125 & fn.
 wits' end, At (To) one's 115, 125 fn.
 "With herself" was 99.
 With might and main 181 fn.
 Wither'd leaves 152.
 within an arrow's flight, To 93.
 within four yards, To 237.
 within the houses, From 92.
 without, From 89.
 Without a pause, without a sound 18.
 Without being knocked 261.
 Without dreaming 67 fn.
 wittes ende, At her (*M. E.*) 125 fn.
 woke to see a white world, He 234.
 Wolf-scaring faggot 85.
 woman, Play the 259 fn.
 woman's gown, Your 119.
 woman wheeling a perambulator, A

146.
 woman to lord it over me, I would have no 271.
 Women poets 107.
 Women's attire 114.
 Won Edward his throne 295.
 Wonderful civility this 30 fn.
 Wooden plate 106.
 Word for word 183.
 words to thank you, I cannot find 144.
 Work (*tr.*) 39.
 Work (*d. v.*) 295. See also under 'Wrought.'
 work to be done, There was little 138.
 Working days 145.
 Working man 173.
 Works its weedy way 264.
 Workmen's flats 119.
 world, How in the 185 fn.
 world, Walked the 162 fn.
 Worlds to come 143.
 Worrying sense 172.
 Worse: A long sight ~ 172; None the ~ 187.
 Worst: Do your ~ 253; Tell us the ~ 77.
 Worth: ~ a cent 174; ~ forty shillings 278; ~ our while 260 fn.; ~ your while 48.
 worth, One shilling's 115.
 worthily, That is 340.
 would have cared a fig, None 174.
 would have no woman to lord it over me, I 271.
 would like to see, Louis 38.
 wouldn't care a hoot 176.
 would you mind lifting the kettle off 315.
 wounded, The 85.
 wounding of our vanity, The 206 fn.

Wrench (*f. v.*) 357.
 Wrenched himself free 357.
 wretched, The 71.
 wretchedness itself Aspiring beggary is 133.
 Wrist and knee 182.
 Write (*d. v.*) 296.
 Writing-table 329 fn.
 written defence, The best 320 fn.
 Wrong (=wrongly) 209.
 wrong'd, Give him much 367 fn.
 wrongfully, (It) was 340.
 Wrought her people lasting good 295.

Y

Yard entrance 210 fn.
 yards, It is in length sixty 132.
 yards, To within four 237.
 yards apart, Sixty 170.
 yards in diameter, Fifty 132.
 Year: A good fifteen hundred a ~ 288; Forty pounds a ~ 177, 215; £ 350 a ~ 295.
 year, Last them the whole 299.
 year, That 164.
 year or two's Latin, A 127.
 Years: Of late ~ 220; Some ~ 304; These twenty long ~ 166.
 years after, Two 225.
 Years ago 315; Five ~ 22; Some ~ 112.
 years back, Thirty 109.
 years later, Two 335.
 years my senior, Two 171.
 Years of age 86, 129, 173.
 Years old: Sixteen ~ 170; Some ~ 214.
 Years over age 173.
 years to come, Twenty 156.
 years younger, Twenty 171.
 years' absence, Ten 115.

Years' War, The One Hundred 115.
 yeer of age, Thrifty (*M. E.*) 129 fn.
 yes, Nodded a 266 fn.
 Yesterday evening 152 fn.
 Yesterday's meeting 115.
 yet to come, What was 144.
 Yield (*d. v.*) 296 & fn.
 Yield+Subj. Compl. 355.
 Yield you my crown 296.
 Yielded himself a passive prey 355.
 讀める 330 fn.
 yonder, The Caves of ~~for~~ 80 fn.

You: as Eth. Dat. 199.
 Youngly he began to serve 340.
 Your dismissal 115.
 Your hot water 118.
 your part, Play 119.
 指を指す 247 fn.
 ゆんで 106.

Z

zu, Die Tür ist (*Germ.*) 346 fn.

補遺索引

A pound and a half of tobacco 405 fn.
 acres of fen, Fifty 394 fn.
 ærende, for (=went) kynges (*O.E.*) 407 fn.
 Æt læstan (*O. E.*) 385.
 Ago (Agone, Gone) 412 & fn.
 ald, Fiftene ger (*M. E.*) 401.
 All but honest (miraculous, unknown) 395 & fn.
 All but shut her eyes (won) 395 fn.
 All but silence 395 fn.
 All his (my) life 428.
 All night (the morning) long 412.
 All their lives 428.
 Animals of every kind 394 fn.
 Another type of man 394 fn.
 Any (Modifying a verb) 419.

Any other than highly desirable 394 fn.
 Anything but a pleasant part 392 fn.
 Anything but asleep 392 fn.
 Anything but satisfactory (secure, shabby, wicked) 391 f.
 Anything but make 395 fn.
 Anything like adequate 393.
 aright (right, rightly), If I remember 424 & fn.
 As good as killed 395 fn.
 At last (*M. E.*) 385.
 At long last 395 fn.
 At once 388.
 Beak of a nose 405 fn.
 Beast of a day (man, night) 402 & fn.
 Beastly night (weather) 402 fn.

- best, For the 383.
 best, Get the 384.
 best of my belief (bent, knowledge, remembrance), To the 382 f.
 better, Get the 384.
 Between pretty and beautiful 394 fn.
 black and blue, Flogged (Thrashed) 431.
 blind, The (Singular) 382.
 Blodread (*O. E.*) 415.
 Bodi and bones (*M. E.*) 418 fn.
 Bodye and soule (*M. E.*) 417 fn.
 Bones and all 418 fn.
 Bordering on repulsive 393.
 Boy of a captain 402.
 Bread and butter 406.
 Brought the dog for a walk 408 fn.
 Brushed her hand 426.
 Brutes of soldiers 402 fn.
 By neck and by crop 417 fn.
- Came** steerage 416.
 Carry the messenger and horse a six days' journey 408 fn.
 Chit of a girl 402.
 clæne (*O. E.*) 424.
 class, Going what 415.
 Come a ride 407 fn.
 Cup and saucer 406.
- Day** in, day out 408.
 days, Early 421.
 days, Rainy 422.
 Devil of a job (place, price) 402
- & fn. f.
 Devil of a lot of 402 fn.
 dinner, Wait 411.
 dogged (as) does it, It's 396 & fn.
 Duffer of a woman 403.
 Dug his heels 426.
- Eahta** and þritig geara (*O. E.*) 401.
 Eal his lif (*O. E.*) 427.
 Early days 421.
 earnest, In good (real) 386.
 easily, Take it 424.
 errand, Run 407.
 errand, Go on an 408 fn.
 Every here and there 387.
 Every kind of animals 394 fn.
 Every now and again (then) 386
 Every once in a while 387 fn.
 Every which way 387 fn.
 Every whit 413.
- fairly**, Play 424.
 Fantasy of a mother 403 fn.
 Far from at ease 309 fn.
 Far from ludicrous (rich, satisfied, stupid-looking, etc.) 309 & fn. f.
 Far from well 309 fn.
 far to go, Had not 388.
 far to ride, Have 388.
 Fatal and neglected 426 fn.
 feet of water, Four and a half 405 fn.
 Fellow of a clergyman 404 fn.
 Fiftene ȝer ald (*M. E.*) 401.
 Fifty acres of fen 394 fn.

- Fine and pleased 426.
 finger, Pointed his (Pointing a) 426 & fn.
 fingers, Ruffling his 427.
 finger-ends, At his (To the) 401 fn.
 finger's ende, At hys 401 fn.
 fingers' ends, At his 401.
 Fleece of cloud 402 fn.
 Flood of tears 402 fn.
 foet and honda, Gebindað him (*O. E.*) 416.
 Fool of the maid 403.
 For always 387.
 For ever 387.
 For everybody 423.
 For her (him) 423.
 For (=went) kynges ærende (*O. E.*) 407 fn.
 For once 388.
 For the best 383.
 For the nonce 383 fn.
 For the nones (*M. E.*) 388 fn.
 For the wisest 383 fn.
 For the worst 383.
 For this once 388 fn.
 For us 422 fn.
 For you 422.
 Four and a half feet of water 405 fn.
 Fox of a man 401.
 Fraud of an Armenian Archbishop 403.
 Full length, Lie (Lying) 406 & fn.
 Full speed 416 fn.
 furthest of my knowledge, To the 382 fn.
- gate**, Send all other laggards the same 408 fn.
 Gate ganngeþþ (*M. E.*) 408.
 geara, Eahta and þritig (*O. E.*) 401.
 Gebindað him foet and honda (*O. E.*) 416.
 Gehwylces cynnes dēor (*O. E.*) 394 fn.
 Get the best (better) 384.
 Ghost of a chance (mother, smile) 403 & fn.
 Glass of water 405 fn.
 Go a (long) walk 407 & fn.
 Go on an errand 408 fn.
 Go on my way 421 fn.
 Go second 415.
 Go the voyage 407 fn.
 Go thy way 421 fn.
 Go thy ways 421 fn.
 Going a Journey 407.
 Gone for a little walk 407 fn.
- Had** not far to go 388.
 Half the night long 412.
 hand, Brushed her 426.
 hand-and-foot, Nursed him 417.
 hand and foot, Tied 416 fn.
 hand on handa (*O. E.*) 418.
 Have far to ride 388.
 Have the worst 384.
 head, Nodded her 427.
 Heart and hand 417.
 Heart and love 406

- Heart and soul 418.
 heels, Dug his 426.
 Hell of a country 403.
 HENDIADYS 405.
 Here and there 386 fn.
 here and there, Every 387.
 His Chaucer (Man) 400.
 Hiss of foam 404.
 home, Last me (See her) 407.
 How do you mean 423.
 How if 430.
 Husk of a woman 403 fn.
- If I remember right (rightly, aright) 424 & fn.
 If the worst comes to the worst 384.
 Iliad of woes 405 fn.
 In good (real) earnest 386.
 in me, Wiser 397.
 in you, How good (Unkind, Very kind) 397.
 Ins and outs 388.
 Instead of better (white) 393.
 It's dogged (as) does it 396 & fn.
 It was thanks to 430.
- journey, Carry the messenger and horse a six days' 408 fn.
 Journey, Going a 407.
 journey, Take her for a 408 fn.
- Kind of fierce and eager 396.
 Kind of think 395 fn.
- kinda (=kind of) 395 fn.
 Kinder (=kind of) 395 fn.
- Labyrinth** of a place (scattered suburbs) 402 & fn.
 Last me home 407.
 late in the day, Too 421 fn.
 Laugh laughter 427.
 Laughed on—a hyena laugh 429.
 Lead us (Led us enough of) a dance 429.
 length, Striding the 406 fn.
 length, Walked (Went) the 406.
 lices and sawle (O. E.) 417 fn.
 Lichame and saule (O. E.) 417 fn.
 Lie (Lying) full length 406 & fn.
 lif, Eal his (O. E.) 427.
 life, All his (my) 428.
 Liif and soule (M. E.) 418 fn.
 Like mad 394 fn.
 Lion of a man 404.
 little, Make too 389.
 Little short of meagre (miraculous) 392.
 lives, All their 428.
- Make** too little (much) 389.
 Mane of hair 405 fn.
 Maze of houses (narrow streets, only four or five hundred houses) 402 & fn.
 Mess of a marriage 404.
 Michil sped (M. E.) 416.
 Mint o' money 405 fn.

- More than bitter-tongued (content, reasonable) 394 fn.
 More than glanced 394 fn.
 More than usually full 394 fn.
 More þen amed (M. E.) 394 fn.
 morning long, All the 412.
 much, Makes too 389.
 Mum's (is) the word 396 & fn.
 My gossip Report 400.
- Near** to handsome 393.
 Neck and crop 417.
 Ned 388 fn.
 Nedes (O. E.) 420.
 Needle and thread 406.
 Needs 420.
 Newt 388 fn.
 Next to impossible (low, etc.) 392 f.
 Next to no time (nothing) 393 fn.
 Nice and clean (hot, ironic) 425.
 Niede (O. E.) 420.
 night, Sleep (Stay) the 410 fn.
 night, Stay for the 410 fn.
 night long, All (Half the) 412.
 Night of her hair 404.
 No end 410.
 Nodded her head 427.
 nonce, For (On) the 388 fn.
 none, Slept 419.
 Now and again (then) 386 fn.
 now and again (then), Every 386.
- On** o'erne weg (O. E.) 421.
 On the nonce 388 fn.
- once, At (For) 388.
 once, For this 388 fn.
 once in a while, Every 387 fn.
 Oon and alle (M. E.) 420.
 Our hero (medical guide) 400.
 Out of the common (ordinary) 384 f.
- Pearls** of teeth 404.
 Pippin of a man 402 fn.
 plank, Walking the 409 fn.
 Play fairly 424.
 Pointed his (Pointing a) finger 426 & fn.
 pound and a half of tobacco, A 405 fn.
 Purely 430 & fn.
- Rare** and bad 426.
 ride, Come a 407 fn.
 ride, Taking him a 408.
 ride, Went for a 407 fn.
 right (aright, rightly), If I remember 424 & fn.
 Ripping good 425.
 Rod and line 406.
 Rogue of a fellow 404.
 Ruffling his fingers 427.
 run, Take him his 408 fn.
 Run errand 407.
- second**, Go 415.
 See her home 407.
 See you at eleven to-morrow 381.
 Semblance of a yawn 405 fn.

- Send all other laggards the same gate 408 fn.
 Serpent of the channel 404.
 Shadow of evidence 403 fn.
 Shan't be long 381.
 Short of shy and hungry 392 fn.
 Showed 381.
 Shrew of a parson 404 fn.
 Skeletons of mules 403 fn.
 Sleep the night 410 fn.
 Slept none 419.
 Slip of a thing 402 fn.
 Slow and moving 426 fn.
 Slowly does it 396.
 Slut of a girl 404 fn.
 Smiled—a strange, wicked smile 429.
 Smiled, her smile was... 429 fn.
 Smiles and affability 405.
 Snawhwitne hlaf (*O. E.*) 415.
 Snehvid (*Dan.*) 415.
 Snippet of a maid 402 fn.
 Snjohvitr (*Icel.*) 415.
 Snöhvit (*Sw.*) 415.
 Some (Modifying a verb) 419 & fn.
 Sort of lonesome 396.
 sort of man, That 394 fn.
 Sort of take 395 fn.
 sped, Michil (*M. E.*) 416.
 Staf on hond (*M. E.*) 418.
 Stay dinner and supper 411 fn.
 Stay fooling 411 fn.
 Stay for coffee 411 fn.
 Stay for the night 410 fn.
 Stay her coming 411 fn.
 Stay question 411 fn.
 Stay supper 410.
 Stay tea 411.
 Stay the evening (night) 410 & fn.
 Stay to dinner (tea) 411 fn.
 Stayed coffee 411 fn.
 stayed them, No door 412 fn.
 Stays my coming 411 fn.
 steerage, Came 416.
 Stop to luncheon 411 fn.
 Streams of traffic 402 fn.
 street, Walking in the 409 fn.
 streets, Tramp (Walk) the 409 & fn.
 streets, Walk its 409.
 Stretch of lake 405 fn.
 Striding the length 406 fn.
 Suggestion of contempt 403 fn.
 supper, Stay 410.
 supper, Wait 411.
 Take Alice for a little promenade 408 fn.
 Take her for a journey 408 fn.
 Take him his run 408 fn.
 Take it easily 424.
 Take Phoebe a walk 408 fn.
 Taking him a ride 408.
 tea, Stay (Waiting) 411.
 thanks to, It was 430.
 That sort of man 394 fn.
 The blind (Singular) 382.
 The church-going virtuous 382.
 Thickness of a floor (the wall) 405 fn.

- third, Travel 416.
 Tied hand and foot 416 fn.
 To the best of my belief (bent, knowledge, remembrance) 382 f.
 To the furthest of my knowledge 332 fn.
 Too late in the day 421 fn.
 Took me a walk 408.
 Tramp the streets 409.
 Travel third 416.
 Trouser(s) pocket 397 & fn.
 Tub of a paddle-boat 405.
 type of man, Another 394 fn.
 Un-worth while 414 fn.
 Unworthy of Mr. Bingley's regard 415 fn.
 Unworthy your acceptance 415.
 voyage, Go the 407 fn.
 Wait dinner (supper) 411.
 Wait me (the hour, her return) 412 fn.
 Waiting tea 411.
 walk, Go a (long) 407 & fn.
 walk, Gone for a little 407 fn.
 walk, Take Phoebe (Took me) a 408 & fn.
 Walk its streets 409.
 Walk the streets 409 fn.
 Walked the length 406.
 Walking in the street 409 fn.
 Walking the plank 409 fn.
 Watch and chain 406.
 way, Go thy 421 fn.
 ways, Go thy 421 fn.
 Week in, week out 409.
 Went for a ride 407 fn.
 Went his accustomed Sunday walk 407.
 Went the length 406.
 What between (betwixt) 419 & fn.
 What do you mean 423.
 What if 430.
 Whatt gate ganngelþ (*M. E.*) 408.
 When the worst came to the worst 384 fn.
 whit, Every 413.
 wisest, For the 383 fn.
 Wisp of a body 403 fn.
 worst, For the 383.
 worst, Have the 384.
 worst, If the worst comes to the 384.
 worst, When the worst came to the 384 fn.
 Worth ambition (the having, your notice) 413.
 Worth (one's) while 414.
 Worthy care 415.
 Worthy of an empress' love 415 fn.
 Year in, year out 409.
 Your beech-trees (flower-beds) 400 fn.
 Your commonplace, featureless crimes 399.

- | | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| Your crocodile (mud, serpent of Egypt, sun) 398. | Your Philosophers (philosophy) 398. |
| Your Latin and Greek dictionaries 399. | Your Phyllis Pelmetts 399. |
| | Your true gentleman (wit) 398. |
| | Your true rustic 398. |

[FINIS]

昭和十七年七月五日 印刷
 昭和十七年七月十日 發行
 昭和廿四年七月五日 八版發行

精説英文法汎論

不許複製

定價金四百圓

著 者	網 江 逸 記
發 行 者	篠 崎 政 吉
印 刷 者	小 坂 孟
印 刷 所	東京都新宿區市谷加賀町一丁目十二番地 大日本印刷株式會社 東京都新宿區市谷加賀町一丁目十二番地

東京都千代田區
 發行所 神田錦町一丁目十三番地 泰 文 堂
 出協會員 番號 A 220001

25.11. 8

835-H93-(1) ㄅ



1200600545650

835

H93

(1) ㄅ

×

複写

終